THE FRENCH TVTOVR:

BY WAY OF

GRAMMAR

EXACTLY AND fully teaching all the moſt neceſſary Rules, for the attaining of the French tongue.

WHEREVNTO

Are alſo annexed three Dialogues: for the furtherance and practice of Gentlemen, Schollers, and others deſirous of the ſaid Language.

By *R.S.L.*

LONDON,

Printed for *Robert Young*. 1625.

COLL REG
BIBL OXON

To the Reader.

His Grammar I have compiled and gathered, partly out of my long experience of Teaching, and partly by following in many things Monſieur Maupas *of Bloïs, a man well knowne to ſome of the greateſt of this kingdome, (who have travelled) to be the learnedeſt and moſt expert Teacher of this tongue. I have proceeded herein by a Grammaticall order, and having given plaine and perfect rules for pronunciation; I ſhew the nature and uſe of the Articles, a thing of no ſmall importance*

in this Language; alſo the way to finde out the Genders of all Nounes: the Conjugating of all Verbes regular and irregular; and after which followeth a liſt of moſt of the undeclinable parts (which commonly doe much hinder learners) alphabetically engliſhed; with a moſt ample Syntax of all the parts of ſpeach: and in the end I have framed a copious Index, expounding all ſuch Nounes and Verbes as lye ſcattered any where unengliſhed: Laſtly, thou haſt here three Dialogues for thy further practice. In all which, my aime and endeavour hath beene to profite the lovers of the Language, and my onely deſire is thy courteous approbation: which if I ſhall obtaine, I ſhall bee encouraged to further labours in this kinde.

Thine R.S.L.

The moſt materiall Faults eſcaped.

PAge 15. l. 16. read, *chevaux*. p. 18. l. 8. r. *her*. p. 33. l. 12. the firſt *mauvaiſe*, r. *mauvais*. p. 35. l. 12. r. *bourreau*. p. 36. l. 8. r. *Orſevre*. p. 37. l. 9. r. *limon*. p. 39. l. 27. r. or *pſeaume*. p. 51. l. 25. r. *que* p. 65. l. 12. *deroy*, r. *devroy*. p. 67. l. 10. r. *ſourniſſant*, *fourniſſons*. p. 70. l. 22. r. *tu eus*. p. 71. l. 3. r. *ils ont eu*. & l. 18. r. *Baſti*. in the ſame p. the third perſ. put twice. p. 73. l. 24 r. *aurrois*. p. 82. l. 15. r. *Nous*. p. 86. l. 6. r. *j'ay eſquarré*: & l. 11. r. *Defaillir*. p. 87. l. 4. r. *Repartir*: & l. 21. r. *ils tindrent*. p. 88. l. 20. r. *Chaloir*. p. 89. l. 25. r. *ils*. p. 93. l. 3. r. *Eſmoudre*. p. 94. l. 2. r. *ſemondre*, and l. 20. r. *vaincs*, or *vainqs*. and l. 21. r. *vaincu*. p. 95. l. ult. r. *are*. p. 96. l. 3. r. *chaut*: & l. 19. r. *prudemment*. & l. 26. r. *ſoudain*. p. 98. l. 25. r. *peu*. p. 99. l. 23. r. *meſnage*: & colum. 2. l. 4. r. *au*. p. 136. l. 27. r. *que*. p. 139. l. 16. r. *ſoyent*. p. 141. l. 22. r. *well*, *I will*. p. 142. l. 23. there is (*well*) too much. p. 144. l. 1. r. *ſometimes put*. p. 147. l. 9. for *who*, r. *hee*. p. 149. l. 15. r. *pauvre*. p. 159. l. 21. r. *Ie m'efforce*. p. 162. l. 19. r. *conſtamment*. p. 166. l. 18. for *Tuant*, read *Quant*. p. 176. l. 20. after *baſtonnade*, r. *a baſtonading*. p. 180. l. 9. r. *cognoiſtre*. p. 181. l. laſt, r. *couvercle*. p. 185. col. 1. l. 10. r. *it annoyeth*, *grieveth*. p. 187. col. 2. l. 1. r. *Eſpreindre*. p. 189. col. 1. l. 17. r. *fawne*. p. 192. col. 1. l. 22. r. *fiſh-hooke*. p. 194. col. 1. l. laſt, r. *Larroneau*. p. 198. col. 2. l. 3. r. *Noircir*. p. 205. col. 2. l. 28. r. *ſe rompre*. p. 206. col. 1. l. 22. r. *Ruſtique*. p. 210. col. 1. l. 17. for *ſiſt*, r. *fiſt* p. 217. l. 21. r. *ça*. p. 230. l. 16. for *baiſa*, r. *baiſe*. page 231. l. 23, read, *ſhe hath done*.

Aux Illuſtres & Treſnobles Gentils-hommes François, Seigneurs & Allemans, Danois, & Flamens, deſireux d'apprendre la langue Angloiſe.

AYant (Meſſeigneurs) eu l'honneur de monſtrer à pluſieurs grands Seigneurs vos compatriots la langue Angloiſe en ceſte ville de Londres, & ayant receu de leur faveur beaucoup plus d'honneur que n'ont porté mes merites, I'ay bien voulu, pour ne me monſtrer du tout ingrat, dedier ce mien labeur, tel qu'il eſt, à vos genereuſes Seigneuries: eſperant

eſperant un *jour* de publier ſous voſtre adveu une Grammaire angloiſe toute entiere : vous ſuppliant cependant de prendre en gré ceſte petite recognoiſſance, de Celuy qui eſt, & touſiours ſera

De vos Seigneuries

tres humble Serviteur

R.S. *de Londres.*

Place this French Epiſtle betweene folio 212. & 213. next before the firſt Dialogue.

THE FRENCH TVTOVR.

CHAP. I.

Of Pronunciation.

OMitting many Grammaticall definitions and obſervations, well knowne to all that are acquainted with the Latine Tongue, we will firſt treat of words, or parts of ſpeach; then of their conſtruction: And becauſe one maine difficultie for the attainment of this language, conſiſteth in the Pronunciation, we will begin with that.

1. *The Pronunciation of the Vowels.*

A is very fully ſounded, as in the Engliſh

word *All*; as *L'avare cache ſon avoir*, The covetous perſon hideth his ſubſtance. This letter doubled, is ſounded ſingle, yet long, as *aage*, which read *âge*, age.

E Hath a three-fold ſound: the firſt is called Maſculine, becauſe it is pronounced ſtrongly and fully, as in the ſecond ſyllable of the Latine word *docere*, or as in the firſt ſyllables of the Engliſh words, *Ever, preſent*: at the end of words it is marked with an acute accent thus, *Bonté, beauté*; or it commeth afore *r*, *z*, or *e* feminine, as *Aimer, aimez, aimée*. The ſecond ſort is the feminine *e*, ſo called, becauſe of it weake and defective ſound, very ſhort & ſcarcely heard, as in the ſecond ſyllable of the Latin word *facere*, or the latter of the Engliſh words, *Little, open, ever*, as *Ame*. Hence are theſe things obſervable. Firſt, that by reaſon of the ſhort ſound of this *e* at the end of words, the ſyllable afore it is made long, and is lifted up in pronunciation, as *A longee*. Secondly, that it being at the end of a word, and the next word beginning with a Vowell, or *h* mute, it is not ſounded at all, but the word wherein it is, joyned to the word following, is ſounded as one, as *Noſtre aage, voſtre homme*, which pronounce *Notrâge, votroome*. Thirdly, that in Monaſyllables, ſuch as *me, te, le, ſe, &c*, comming afore a vowell or *h* mute, the *e* is not written, but an Apoſtrophall note ſet in ſtead therof, as *l'ame*;

and

and the further to exemplifie theſe two laſt notes, marke this verſe:

Puis que l'ame humaine eſt d'une eſſence immortelle,

Seeing that the Soule of man is of an immortall eſſence. read it thus;

Pui ke lamumean e dun eſſanſ immortelle.

Yet this *e* in ſome phraſes, at the end of Verbes of the firſt perſon, the pronoune *je* following, is ſounded almoſt as *e* maſculine, for the more Emphaſis, as *Cherche-je voſtre dommage?* Do I ſeeke your hurt? The third ſort of *e* is called the open *e*, becauſe it is pronounced with a more open mouth than the two former, as the Engliſh doe their Diphthong *ea* in *Sea*, *feare*, and the like. It is in all monaſyllables in *r* and *s*, as *fer*, *mer*, *les*, *mes*, *des*, *tes*, *ſes*, *ces*, *pres*, and in theſe diſſyllables in *es* and *er*, *Expres*, *apres*, *acces*, *exces*, *proces*, *deces*, *ſucces*, *fier*, *danger*, *meſtier*, *cordonnier*, and other names of Occupations, *meſſager*, *vacher*, *archer*, *&c.* Alſo afore *c*, *l*, *t*, and *x*, as *avec*, *tel*, *diſcret*, *perplex*; alſo in all words, whoſe firſt ſyllable is *Eſ*, or *E*, as *Eſcrire*, *Eſtudier*, *Eviter*, *Egliſe*. Note that in the words *Nettetė*, *Eſlevé*, and ſom others, all the three ſorts or ſounds of *e* are found; the firſt being the open *e*, the ſecond the feminine, and the third the maſculine.

Further, obſerve theſe three rules: Firſt, a word ending in *é* maſculine, if there be *e* in the ſyllable afore it, the ſame is ſhort, as *levé*: Se-

condly, a word ending in *e* feminine, if there be *e* in the ſyllable afore it, the ſame is the open *e*, as *leve*. Thirdly, when this vowell is doubled in the midſt of words, they are both maſculine; or the firſt maſculine, and the ſecond the open *e*, as *Séel, réel, agréer, guéer*, &c. but if it be doubled at the end of words, then the firſt is the maſculine, and the latter the feminine, as *Aimée*, beloved.

Alſo *e* afore *m* and *n*, is ſounded as *a*, as *Entendement*, which pronounce *antandemant*; except in the third perſons plurall of verbs ending in *ent*, as *Aiment*, which ſound *imet*, the *e* beeing ſhort; except alſo when *i* commeth afore it in the ſame ſyllable, as *Mien, tien, ſien, bien, rien, chien*: but when the ſyllable is parted, it is ſounded as *a*, as in theſe; *Audience, ſcience, experience, eſcient, ingredient, inconvenient, expedient, orient, fient, client, patient*, and their derivatives.

I vowell is pronounced as the Engliſh doe their diphthong *ee* in *deem, meet, needy*, and the like, as *fit mine*, which ſound *feet meene*. And note that *i* is ſet afore *ll* in the midſt, and *l* at the end of words, without being pronounced, as *faillir*; it ſerving onely for a ſigne of the liquification of the *l*, as in that letter ſhall be ſhewed.

O is pronounced as in Latin or Engliſh, ſaving afore *m, n*, and *u*, making together a ſyllable; where it is ſounded as the Engliſh doe their *oo* in *Moon, groom, brood*; as *Mon bon homme*, which reade

reade *moon boon oome*: but it hath its owne ſound where the ſyllable is divided, as in words compound with the Prepoſition *Pro*, as *Promettre, provenir*, and in words formed of the Greeke and Latine, as *Comete, tome, homicide, domicile, dominer, vomir, honorable; novice, ovale, povre* (which is alſo written *pauvre*). Alſo *o* afore *l* in ſome words, which is ſounded *oo*; as in *l* ſhall be ſhewed.

u vowell hath a ſound peculiar to the French, after a kinde of whiſtling, by opening a little the end of the lips, and as it were between *ou* and *i* (French) except in the diphthong *ou*. Examples of the ſounds coming neer to it, you may have in the Scottiſh word *gud*, or the Engliſh words *buſie, lute*.

Y is never uſed for a conſonant (as in Engliſh), and is ſounded as the French *i*, or Engliſh *ee*; yet is never ſet to liquifie the *l*, as the *i* is. It is uſed either alone, as *y eſt il?* is hee there? or where *i* might be miſtaken for a conſonant, as *yver, yeux*; or between two vowels, as *payement, playe, ioye*; and in the end of words, as *foy, appuy*; or laſtly, to keep the orthographie, as *Syllable, Myſtere*, &c.

The pronunciation of Conſonants.

THE generall rule of conſonants, is, that when two or three conſonants come together, none but the later is pronounced, as *Eſtes-vous là?* are you there? which reade *Ete voo là?* except the firſt be any of the liquids *l, m, n, r*, or *v*,

or *f* ſometime: as *Mon livre*, my book, *avec moy*, with me; where the *n* & *c* are ſounded. or otherwiſe the rule may be this: *B*, *d*, *g*, *p*, *ſ*, *t*, *x*, and *z*, are not pronounced (at the end of words eſpecially) when they come after another Conſonant (eſpecially beginning the next word) as *Tantoſt fait*, ſoon done; which ſound, *Tantofet*: yet anie conſonant finiſhing a period, is ever pronounced. And for better underſtanding of this whole rule, take this larger example: *Il eſt trop tard de fermer l'eſtable quand les chevaux ſont dehors*: It is too late to ſhut the ſtable when the horſes be gone. which muſt thus be pronounced, *Il e tro tar de fermer le-table kan le ſhevo ſoon dehors.*

B in the midſt of words, comming afore another conſonant (viz. *m*, *n*, *ſ*, *t*, *v*) may be pronounced, yet moderately; as, *Abſence*, *abſynthe*, *obmettre*, *ſubmettre*, *abnegation*, *ſubſtance*, *nonobſtant*, *obtenir*, *ſubvenir*, *ſubvertir*. But in the prepoſition *Soubs*, and in theſe words, *ſubject*, *debvoir*, *debteur*, *debte*, it is not pronounced, and it is in your choyce to write it or not. Alſo at the end of words: as *Plomb*, *palomb*, *coulomb*, the *b* is not ſounded.

C, afore *e*, *i*, and *y*, is ſounded as *ſ*: as *Cety*. but afore other vowels, as *k*: as *Car*, *corps*; *ç* with an *s* or tail under, is ſounded as *ſ*, or *ſſ*, as *deça*, *façon*. Alſo *Ch* is pronounced as *ſh*, as *choſe*, *chemin*. except in the Greeke words *Archange*, *charactere*, *chreſtien*, *chreſme*; and in *Cholere*, *chorde*, *eſchole*, *Cichoree*;

and

and in proper names, as *Nicholas*: in all which ſound it as *k*, omitting *h*. At the end of wordes *C* is pronounced; as *Avec, ſac, tric trac*, and commonly alſo in the midſt of a word; as *Accident, accepter, acte, action, fiction, delict, dicter, ſuccez, effectuer, affection, infecter, facteur, detracteur*, &c. except it follow a diphthong, as *Luict, alaicter, fruict, nuict, ſ'annuicter, luicter, traict*, & its derivatives, *traicter, attraict*, &c *faict, poinct, joincture*; except alſo *ſuccer, effect, ject, lict, dict*, & their derivatives, *jecter, ſubject, project, alicter, edict*: in all wch *C* is not pronounced, ſaving in *Effectuer* aboveſaid, and *Conjecture*.

D finiſhing a ſyllable, and comming afore *m*, or *i*, or *v*, conſonants, is commonly not ſounded, as *Admiral, adjuger, advancer*; except in theſe, *Admettre, admirer, adminiſtrer, adverbe, adverſaire, adjection, adverſité*, and their derivatives. Alſo *D* at the end of a word, the next beginning with a vowell or *h* mute, is ſounded as *t*, as *Appren dil? grand honneur*, which reade *apprantil, grantoonneur*: and ſo after an *n* at the end of words, it ſerves to lengthen that ſyllable.

F at the end of words is ever plainly pronounced, as *œnf, ſoif, vif*: but in feminine Adjectives, whoſe Subſtantives end in *f*, it is not pronounced, as *briefve* of *brief, griefve* of *grief, ſouëfve* of *ſouëf*, &c.

G afore *e, i*, and *y*, hath a kinde of ſoft ſound as *j* conſonant, as *giſant, juge*: but afore any o-

ther vowell hard, as *Garder, gouverner.* Sometimes between *g*, and one of theſe vowels; *a, o*, is put an *e*, which is not pronounced, but ſerveth onely to mollifie the *g*, as *bourgeois, ſongeard, geolier*, &c. and contrariwiſe, *u* is oftentimes ſet between *g* and *e*, or *i*, to harden its pronunciation (the *u* not being ſounded) as *Guerir, guerre, guiſe*; which ſound as the Engliſh doe *gueſt, Gilbert*: yet in theſe words, *Eſguiſer*, and the proper name *Guiſe*, the *u* is pronounced. When *g* commeth afore *n*, it hath a faint and liquid ſound, not parting the *g* and *n*, but making them together to be the beginning of the ſyllable following, as *Oignon, mignon, Vigne, allemagne, compagnie, ſoigner, compagnon*, which ſound *mi-gnon, compa-gnon*; or almoſt as the Engliſh *minion, companion*; *nion* making but one, not two ſyllables: except *Cognoiſtre*, and its compounds and derivatives, in wch *g* ſeemeth to be turned into *u*, ſo as it is ſounded as if it were written *Counoiſtre*: ſome therefore write it *Connoiſtre*. Alſo *ſigne* and its derivatives are indifferently pronounced, *ſine* or *ſigne, ſignifier* or *ſinifier*, though *g* be ever written. Alſo in theſe words, *doigt* and *vingt*, *g* is idle, ſaving onely to ſhew their Originall. At the end of words, not diphthonged, as *ſang, rang, long*, *g* ſerves to make the ſyllable long: but in words diphthonged, it is not ſounded, as *ſoing, loing, poing, beſoing*; and in *harang*, wch are often written *ſoin, loin*, &c.

H is

H is mute, or loſeth its aſpiring ſound in many words, eſpecially come from the Latine, as *heure, honneſte, homme, heur, heureux, heritier, helas, haleine, trahir, esbahir*; alſo in *huict, huictieſme, huictante*, and *huile*, with their derivatives, where *h* ſeemeth to have a peculiar ſound, almoſt as *v*, as if it were written *vuict*, or after the Engliſh Orthographie *weet*: but in many other words, wch are meer French, it is ſounded with a ſtrong aſpiration, as *Haïr, hannir, áhan, áhanner, hardi, haſard, honnir, harangue, hanter*. When *c* comes afore *h*, it is ſounded, as in *c* is ſhewed.

I is a conſonant, when beginning a ſyllable it cometh afore a vowell, as *Ialoux, jeune, joli*, and is pronounced as *g* before *e* or *i*, but nothing ſo hard as the Engliſh: which is good to bee learned by the eare.

L hath its naturall ſound, ſaving in *ſol* (for a peece of money called a *ſouz*) pronounced *ſou*: as for *col, licol, mol, fol*, which after the vulgar ſort are pronounced *cou, mou*, &c. they are better pronounced as they are written; but *cul* ſoundeth not the *l*. Alſo *l* is not pronounced after the diphthongs *au, eu, ou*, nor afore *t, ſ*, or *z* in the ſame ſyllable, as *Heaulme, paulme, hault, faulx, veult, peult, couldre, mouldre, poulſer, poulpitre, ſaoul, fils, ils, tels*: yet in *coulpe, poulpe*, and their derivatives, the *l* is ſounded. Moreover, double *ll* after *ai, ei, i, eui, oui*, and *ui*, in the midſt of words; and ſingle

gle

gle *l* at the end of words, hath a liquid ſound, by lightly touching with the tongue the roofe of the mouth (almoſt as in the Engliſh word *ſcullion*) the *i* not being ſounded (or as if it were turned into *g*) but ſerving onely as a note of the ſaid liquid ſound, as *Travailler*, *veiller*, *faillir*, *cueillir*, *mouiller*, *brouiller*, *Iuillet*, &c. *vieil*, *ſoleil*, *eſmail*, *œil*, *eſventail*, *babil*, *portail*, *peril*, *baril*, *accueuil*, *cercueil*, *ſommeil*, *reſveil*, *verrouril*, &c. except heere *ville*, *mille*, *cæviller*, *pupille*, *eſtoile*, which are ſounded with one *l*; except alſo *il*, *fil*, *vil*, *util*, *ſubtil*, *viril*, *ſervil*, *cil* (in poeſie) for *celuy*, *poil* and *mil* for number, which ſound *l* plainly. The Italians in their *voglio*, and the like, and the Spaniards in their *llamar* come ſomewhat neer this liquifaction of *l*. And for your exerciſe, marke the difference of ſound in theſe words, *Piller*, *piler*, *bailler*, *baler*, *balier*, *ſaillir*, *ſalir*, *ſueil*, *ſeul*, *vieille*, *vielle*, &c.

M at the end of words is weakly ſounded as *n*, without cloſing the lips, as *faim*, *renom*.

N is not ſounded at all in the third perſons plurall of verbs ending in *ent*, as *aiment*, *donnent*, which ſound *imet*, *donet*.

P, in ſome words come from the Latine, and at end of words, is pronounced, as *Preſomption*, *option*, *precepte*, *hanap*, *coup*, *galop*, *ſeptante*, *ſeptentrion*, *adoption*, *ſoupçon*: but in many other words, betweene two conſonants, and ſometimes afore one, is not ſounded, as *Compter*, *corps*, *temps*, *champs*,

champs, nepveu, niepce, ſept, je romps, dompter, baptiſer, and their derivatives; alſo in theſe plurals, *draps, hanaps, ſirops, camps, coups, nopces,* and the like.

R ſingle is gently ſounded, as *guere*; but doubled, ſtrongly, with prolonging the ſyllable, as *guerre, terre.*

S betweene two vowels is ſounded as *z*, as *Cauſe, choſe, maiſon*; alſo in theſe words, *priſe, tinſe,* and their derivatives, and makes the ſyllable afore it long, ſo it be not an *e* feminine, which is ever ſhort, as in theſe words, *peſer, geſir, meſure,* and the like: except from this rule thoſe compounds whoſe ſimples begin with *ſ*, as *Enſaluer, reſerrer, reſembler,* which ſound it ſtrongly. This letter is written in many words where it is not ſounded, and is there but to lengthen the ſyllable, as *Eſcrire,* which may be written (as by ſome it is) *écrire.* But to knowe where this letter *ſ* is to be pronounced, and where not, obſerve theſe rules: Firſt, *ſ* is ſounded in all compounds with theſe inſeparable prepoſitions; *As, abs, cons, diſ, inſ, poſt, proſ, obſ, ſubſ, ſuſ, tranſ, reſ*; as *Aſtraindre, abſtenir, diſputer, conſtant, ſubſtance, ſuſpect, tranſcrire,* &c. excepting hence *Reſpondre, reſpandre, reſver, reſverie, reſveil, reſveiller, reſpit, reſtablir,* which ſound it not. Secondly, words beginning with *Eſ*, commonly ſound not *ſ*, as *Eſcrire, eſclorre, eſpouſſeter, eſtudier,* &c. except *Eſperer, eſpoir, eſperance, eſpagne, eſpace, eſpece, eſtaſe, eſtame, eſtamine,* ſta-

mell-

mell-cloth, but not for Tamie-ſtuffe; *eſtropier, eſtropiat, eſtrapade, eſtradiot, eſtrade, eſtimer, eſprit, eſpion, eſtoc, eſtoccade, eſtafier*, all which pronounce the *ſ*. Thirdly, *ſ* is pronounced when it cometh afore *c* ſounded hard, *qu*, or *g*, as *Eſclandre, riſque, eſcabeau, eſcamper, eſcarbillat, eſcarbot, eſcargot, eſcarlatin* (but not *eſcarlate*) *eſcarpins, eſcarcelle, eſcalade, eſcarre, eſcopetterie, eſcorne* for ſcorn or ſhame, *Eſcouade, eſquadron, eſquiver, birraſque, baſque, biſcaye, biſcuit, boſquet, bruſque, buſquer, caſque, contreſcarpe, croteſque, damaſquiner, debuſquer, ambuſcade, friſque, juſques, juſquiame, lanſquenet, maſque, moſquet, moſquee, muſc, muſcles, obeliſque, paſquil, preſque*: except *paſque, eſueſque, eſclat, eſcart, eſcouter, eſclair, eſclairer, eſquierre, eſquarrer*, and ſome others which follow the ſecond rule above given in not pronouncing *ſ*. Fourthly, the *ſ* is ſounded in ſuch as come from Latine words in *ſto, ſtis, ſtus, ſtris*, as *Perſiſter, peſte, modeſte, comeſter, triſte, illuſtre*, &c. except *Preſter* & its compounds: yet *preſtation* ſoundeth *ſ*. Fiftly, it is pronounced in all proper names, as *Auguſte*; except in theſe, *Baſle, Creſpin, Eſcoſſe, Hieroſme*, which omit it. Sixtly, it is ſounded in words ſignifying the faſhion of peoples, *à la Moreſque*, after the Mooriſh faſhion, *Grequeſque*, &c. And moreover, *ſ* is pronounced in theſe words following, and ſome others come from the Latine; *Accoſter*, ſignifying to approach, but not when it is to prop up, *Anualiſte*.

naliſte. Apoſter. Apoſtolique, but not in Apoſtre. Apoſtume. Artiſte. Aſperges, and Aſperger. Aſtres. Atteſter. Baſter, to ſuffice, but not Baſter, to put on a pack-ſaddle. Baſtille. Baſtion. Baſtonnade, but not in Baſton. Beſtialité, and Beſtiole, but not in Beſtail, Beſte, nor Beſtelette. Blaſphemer. Cameriſte. Cauſtique. Celeſte. Chaſteté. Circonſtance. Ciſternes. Cliſtere. Deſaſtre. Deſeſperer. Enregiſtrer. Evangeliſte. Feſtin, but not in Feſte. Gaſtadour. Gaſpiller. Geſtes. Herboriſte. Hiſtoire. Improviſte. Inceſte. Inſtant. Inſpirer. Inveſtiture, not in Veſtir. Iuriſte. Iuſtice. Legiſte. Liſte. Limeſtre. Leſte. Luſtre. Maſtic. Menſtrual. Miniſtre. Miſte. Moleſte. Monſtre, a Monſter, but not for a Muſter. Mouſtache. Mouſtele. Nonobſtant. Oſtade. Penſioniſte. Paſtel. Paſtorelle, not in Paſtoureau and Paiſtre. Paſtenades. Poſte. Piſteau. Poſtillon. Poſtille. Quæſtion. Reſte. Ruſtre. Ruſtaud. Sequeſtre. Siniſtre, not Seneſtre. Tempeſtif, not in Tempeſte. Teſter. Teſtament. Teſton. Teſtonner. Veſtiaire. Viſtempenard.

T afore *i*, in words come from the Latine, is ſounded as *ç* or *ſ*, as *Ambition*, *ſeditieux*: except in *Amitié*, *inimitié*, *pitié*, *moitié*. Further, *th* is pronounced onely *t*, as *Atheiſte*. Alſo in words ending in *ts* it is not ſounded, as *un rets*, *des mots*: and in this little word *Et* it is never pronounced. Laſtly, in the third perſon ſingular of verbs ending with a vowell, when *il*, *elle*, or *on* do follow,

low, though no *t* bee ſeen, yet muſt one bee (between the verb and them) pronounced: *Fera-il? Dira-on?* as if it were written *Feratil? Diraon?* which is ſometime diſcerned by this conjunctive note --.

V is a conſonant when it comes afore a vowell, or afore an *r* in the ſame ſyllable, as *verité, vray, couvrir:* in which laſt word, the firſt *u* is a vowell, the other a conſonant.

X, in words come of the Latine, keepeth its ſound, as *Perplex, expedier, example*, and in theſe meere French words, *Exploit, exploiter*. Otherwiſe at end of words it is pronounced as *ſ*, or in the midſt between two vowels, as *z*; as *Dix, maux, heureux, ſixieſme, deuxieſme:* except in *Soixante, lexive*, in wch it is ſounded as *ſſ*, thus, *ſoiſſante*, &c.

Pronunciation of Diphthongs and Triphthongs.

TWo or three vowels together, making but one ſound or ſyllable, are called dipthongs or tripthongs.

Ai, or *Ay* is commonly pronounced as the open *e*, or *é* maſculine: as *I'ay, mais, paix, faire:* which reade *jé, més, pés, fére*. From this rule are theſe exceptions: 1. When it commeth afore a vowell, as *Aye, ayons, ayant*; where it hath its naturall ſound: as if you ſaid, *A-i-ons*, or *a-y-ant*; yet making them but two ſyllables. 2. Alſo when it commeth afore *m* or *n* (without an *e* following) as *Main, faim*

faim, which is ſounded ſomewhat broadly, almoſt as the Engliſh do *y* or *i*, in *lyme*, *mine*, and the like. but note, that when an *e* followeth the ſaid *n*, it is ſounded *é*, as *laine*, *haine*. 3 Except when it commeth afore *ll* in the midſt, or ſingle *l* at the end of words: as *Bailler*, *travail*. as alſo afore *gn*: as *Compaignie*, *allemaigne* (as ſome doe write them) where onely *a* is ſounded, the *i* ſerving but for a ſigne of liquifying the *l* or *gn*, as in thoſe letters is ſhewed.

Ao is ſounded either by omitting the *a*, as in *ſaoul*, which reade *ſou*; or by omitting the *o*, as in *Paon*, *faon*, *taon*; which ſound *Pân*, *fân*, *tân*, long: yet in *Paonner*, *faonner*, both letters are pronounced.

Au is ever ſounded *o*, as *Pauvre*, *haut*, *chevaux*; which reade *Po-vre*, *hôt*, *chevôs*: but if a vowell or *r* follow the *v*, then is it a conſonant: as *avoir*, *havre*.

Ea ſoundeth both letters in *Peage*, *peageur*; but not in the word *Dea*, for which ſay *da*.

Eau ſound *eo*; as *Peau*, *beauté*: it is ſeparated into two ſyllables in the word *Héaume*.

Ei afore the ſyllables *ne*, *ſe*, *ze*, is ſounded as *é* maſculine: as *Peine*, *treize*: except afore *n* without *e* after it: as *plein*, which ſoundeth both. Alſo *ei* in theſe *vei*, *fei*, and their derivatives, is pronounced as if they were written *vi*, *fi*, or as the Engliſh *ee*.

Eoi

Eoi is but *oi*; as *veoir*, or *voir*. of which anon.

Eu ſoundeth both, as *heur*, or as the Engliſh do *u* in the preterperfect tenſes of verbes; as *veu*, *peu*. It is not a dipthong, when *a* followeth *u*, but the *u* becommeth a conſonant; as *evader*: the like when it comes afore *r* in manie words: as *Devray*, *recevray*, *fiévre*, *lévre*, *liévre*, *bièvre*: but in *Meilleur ſeur*, &c. it is a dipthong.

Eui, *iei*, *uei*, *oui*, *œi*, are ſounded *eu*, *ie*, *ou*, *œ*, without pronouncing the laſt *i*, which comming afore *ll* or *l*, ſerveth but to make the *l* liquid; as *recueuil*, or *recueil*, *vieil*, *mouiller*, *oeil*.

Ie expreſſeth both vowels jointly: as *pied*, *ſoulier*: yet *ie* is ſometimes ſeparated into two ſyllables; firſt, in words ending in *e* feminine: as *amie*. ſecondly, in the Infinitive mood of verbes in *ier*: as *prier*. thirdly, in names of Nation and of Art, ending in *ien*: as *Italien*, *Muſitien*.

Ieu ſoundeth all mixt into one; as *Yeux*, *mieux*, *lieu*: but it is divided into two ſyllables, in Adjectives in *eux*, come from Latins in *oſus*: as *Gracieux*, *curieux*; and in words come of verbs, whoſe Infinitives end in *ier*: as *Prieur*, *crieur*.

Io is onely a diphthong in the firſt perſon plurall of verbes: as *Aimions*.

Oi and *Oy* is ſounded *oe* or *œ*: as *foy*, *trois*. But afore *n*, as *oindre*, it hath it owne ſound.

Oeu ſound *eu*; as *œuf*, *cœur*, *ſœur*.

On is ſounded as the Engliſh *oo* in *brood*, *moone*;

and

and the like: as *Pour vous nous mourons tous:* for your ſake we die all.

Oie or *Oye*, is no triphthong, ſave onely in the third perſons plurall of verbs: as *Aimoyent*. which ſound as *oy*, but long.

ui or *uy*, lively ſoundeth both the vowels in one ſyllable: as *luy*, *nuict*.

Of Orthography, of quantitie of Syllables, and of Accents.

THough we have alreadie, in the pronunciation, given ſufficient light for learning the Orthographie; yet theſe few notes (given by ſome) are not to be contemned.

1 The moſt part of ſtrange words come from the Latine and Greeke, doe retaine (howſoever pronounced) their owne Orthographie: as *Philoſophe*, *Chirurgien*, *lict*, *faict*: and not as the Italians *Filoſofo*, *letto*, *fatto*.

2 Syllables are not diſtinguiſhed by the number of letters: for though moſt of them conſiſt of two or three letters; yet ſome be of 4 or 5, or more, as *Dieux*, *cieulx*.

3 Nounes come from Latine words in *oſus*, in French doe end in *eux*; as *odieux*, of *odioſus*.

4 There be many words differ little or nothing in pronunciation, but much in writing and ſignification. as theſe: *Sain*, ſound, and *Sein* a boſome. *Laid*, foule, and *Laict*, milke. *Grace'* grace,'

grace, and *Graſſe* fatt. *Peſcher*, to fiſh, and *Pecher*, to ſinne. *Sans*, without, and *Sens*, the ſenſe. *Vaine*, vaine, and *Veine*, a veine. *Faix*, a burden, & *Fais*, doeſt. *Saur*, a ſiſter, and *Seur*, ſure. *Saint*, holy; and *Ceinct*, girt. *D'eux*, of them; and *Deux*, two. *Maiſtre*, Maiſter; and *Mettre*, to put. *Quand*, when; and *Quant á*, as for. *Selle*, a ſaddle; and *Celle*, her, or that. *Nom*, a name; and *Non*, not, or no. *Se*, himſelfe, or it ſelfe; and *Ce*, this. *Pois*, peaſe, *Poids*, weight; and *Poix*, pitch. *Compte*, a reckoning, *Comte*, an Earle; and *Conte*, a tale. *Point*, not, *Poinct*, a point; and *Poing*, a fiſt. *Mais*, but, *Mets*, a diſh of meate; and *Mes*, my. *Ville*, a citie or towne; and *Vile*, baſe.

For the quantitie of ſyllables, obſerve firſt, that the laſt ſyllable, or laſt ſave one, is with the French, for the moſt part, accented or made long in pronunciation; as *Magie, apres.*

2 Everie vowell afore *m* or *n*, joined with an other conſonant, is long: as *Santé, endormir.*

3 The ſyllable comming next afore *e* feminine, is ever long: as *Dragee, magie, tue, voye, caille, ſymbole, louäble*, &c.

4 The ſyllable next afore *é* maſculine, whether the ſame *é* be accented, or before *r* or *z*, unaccented, is for the moſt part ſhort: as *Tuër, tué, muez.*

5 The diphthong *au* is long: as *autrement.*

6 All verbes ending in *a, au*, and *aſt*, have that ſyl-

ſyllable long: as *Aima, aimas, aimaſt.*

7 Words ending in *os*, have the ſame long: as *Prepos, diſpos, repos.*

8 Whenſoever a letter is not ſounded, the ſyllable afore it is long: as *Teſte, Maſtin*; which putteth a difference betweene them and *Tete, matin.*

The acute accent is never uſed, but over *é* maſculine: the grave accent is uſed over *Là* the Adverbe of place, to diſtinguiſh it from *La* the feminine article or pronoune; and over *Où* the Adverbe of place, to diſtinguiſh it from *Ou* the diſjunctive; and over *à* the article or prepoſition, to diſtinguiſh it from the verbe *a*, hath.

Apoſtrophus is a note or ſigne of a letter wanting, and ſupplied by this mark (') and is uſed eſpecially in Monaſyllables in *e*, ſuch as *Ie, me, te, ſe, de, ne, que, le, ce*, and *la*; as *I' aime* for *Ie aime*, *l' ame* for *la ame*; and in the conjunction *ſi* afore *il*, as *ſ' il, ſ' ils*; and in verſe ſometimes *ſ' elle, ſ' elles, ſ' on, ſ' ainſi*, for *ſi elle, ſi elles, ſi on, ſi ainſi*; alſo in the Prepoſitions *entre* and *contre* in compoſition, as *Contr' oppoſer, entr' ouïr, entr' ouvrir*: alſo in *ma, ta, ſa*, & *mon, ton, ſon*, as *m' amie m' amour, t' amie t' amour, ſ' amie ſ' amour*, for *mon amie mon amour, ton amie ton amour, ſon amie ſon amour*: alſo when a ſyllable is cut off by Syncope, as *ſça' vous* for *ſçavez vous?* and the like.

Two points ·· over a vowell are ſometimes ſet, either to ſhew the ſame vowell not to bee

(miſtaken for) a conſonant, as *Moüelle*; or that the ſame is to be divided from a vowell aforegoing, as *queuë*, *naïf*, *reïterer*, *reünir*, *jouër*; which reade *keu-e*, &c.

The conjunctive note is a ſhort diviſion-line between two words ſounded together as one; as *Porte-faix. di-je. que fait-il?*

As for the points and diſtinction of periods, marks of interrogation, parentheſis, admiration, &c. the uſe of the Latine is to be followed.

Chap. II.

Of the Articles.

An Article (after ſome Authors) is a declinable part of ſpeech, whereby other parts, to wit, Nounes, Pronounes, and Participles (otherwiſe of themſelves undeclinable) are declined, and their Genders, Numbers, and Caſes knowne: although in truth theſe onely, *le*, *la*, *les*, doe ſeem to be Articles, and the other Prepoſitions rather.

The ordinary declining or diſtribution of them is thus:

The definite Articles.

		Maſc. Gender,	feminine.
Sing.	Nom. Accuſat.	*Le*,	*la.*
	Gen. Ablat.	*Du*, *de l'*,	*de la.*
	Dative	*Au*, *à l'*,	*à la.*

Com-

Common Gender.

Plur. { *Les*, the. / *Des*, of the, from the, with the. / *aux*, *és*, to the, at the, in the.

Note, that *de l'* and *à l'* are both of the Maſculine and Feminine Genders, and are ſet before Nounes beginning with a vowell, or *h* mute, to avoid gaping, as *de l' encre*, *à l' homme*.

The Indefinite Articles, being of the Common Gender, and of both Numbers.

Nomin. Accuſ. without an Article; but in Engliſh the Article *a* or *an*.

Genit. Ablat. *De*, of, from, with; or of a, from a, with a, or an.

Dative, *à*, to, at, for, or to a, at a, for a, or an.

Hence you ſee, that the French have but three diſtinct caſes, the Nominative and Accuſative being both one, and the Genitive and Ablative.

The definite Articles (called by ſome finite) doe denote a certain definite or limited thing; and have the force to collect, reſtrain, or bound the univerſall or generall ſignification of words (which they have of themſelves) to a ſtrict ſenſe, applied to one alone, as the Engliſh alſo doe by their Article *The*; as *I' ay veu le Roy*, *je ſuis ſerviteur du Roy*, *j' ay parlé au Roy*; I have ſeene the King, I am ſervant of the King, I have ſpoken to the King; meaning one certain King onely, as the King of England, or ſome one King (haply) before,

before, or immediately after ſpoken of.

On the contrary, the indefinite Articles binde not to any particular ſubject, but leave their termes to their unbounded generality; as, *Celuy eſt vray Roy qui regne par juſtice*, he is a true King which raigneth by juſtice. *Il promit en foy de Roy de garder equité*, hee promiſed in the faith of a King to maintaine equity. *Il affiert á Roy de regir ſes ſujets comme pere*, it belongs to a King to rule his ſubjects as a father.

So, when wee ſpeak of a whole integrall body, wee ſpeak indefinitely, uſing the Article *un*, or the Pronoune *quelque*; as firſt, of Subſtances, as *un Roy*, a King. *quelque Roy* ſome King, *une eſpee* a ſword, &c. Secondly, of qualites adhering to Subſtances, as *une peine* a paine, *un ſouci* a care, *une chaleur* a heat, *quelque ſoin* ſome care, &c. Now in this ſenſe ſpeaking of theſe in the plural number, we apply *des* before the Subſtantives, & *De* before Adjectives preceding thoſe Subſtantives, as *Des Rois* Kings, *de bons Rois* good Kings, *des ſoucis* cares, *de poignans ſoucis* pricking cares.

The uſe of definite Articles.

1. Contrariwiſe, when wee ſpeak of things (as it were) by parts, portions, or a quantity of them, we uſe the definite Articles; and that is, firſt, when wee ſpeak of ſubſtances, retaining the name of the whole, as *Du pain* bread, or ſome bread; *du vin* wine, or ſome wine; *de la toille* linnen

nen cloth, or ſome linnen cloth. Secondly, when we ſpeak of qualities adhering to thoſe ſubſtances, or lying in the action of the underſtanding, as *De la chaleur* heat, or ſome heat; *de la blancheur* whiteneſſe, or ſome whiteneſſe; *du froid* cold, or ſome cold; *de la peine* paine, ſome paine; *du plaiſir* pleaſure, or ſome pleaſure; *de l' eſprit* wit, ſome wit. And in theſe phraſes and ſenſe, theſe Articles have not onely place in the Genitive or Ablative Caſes, but alſo in the Nom. Accuſ. and Dative, by means of the Article *à*: as *C' eſt de l' argent* it is money, or ſome money; *verſez du vin* fill ſome wine; *ceſte liqueur reſemble à du vin* this liquour is like to wine, *j' ay employé mes deniers à du blé* I have imployed my money in corne, *à de la marchandiſe* in marchandiſe, *j' ay veu des Gentils-hommes* I have ſeen ſome gentlemen, *j' ay communiqué mon affaire à des Docteurs* I have communicated my buſineſſe to ſome Doctors, or to Doctors.

But when in theſe phraſes the Adjectives are ſet and conſtrued before the Subſtantives, then in ſtead of *du, de l', de la* and *des*, it is better to uſe *de*, as *de bon vin* good wine, *de fine ſoye* fine ſilke, *de belle eſtoffe* faire ſtuffe, *de braves Gentils-hommes* brave Gentlemen, *de ſçavans Docteurs* skilfull Doctors.

So then you ſee, that many ſubſtances may be taken integrally, as *un blé*, meaning a corn-field,

un bois a whole foreſt, *une paille* a ſtraw, *un bœuf* an oxe or beeve, *un mouton* a ſheep or whole mutton; and diviſibly into parts, *du blé* ſome corn, *du bois* wood, or ſome wood; *de la paille* ſtraw, or ſome ſtraw; *du bœuf* beef, or ſome beefe; *du mouton* mutton, or ſome mutton.

2 When wee ſpeak of the members of the body, following the Latine Syntax, in ſtead of the poſſeſſives (which the Engliſh would uſe) wee muſt uſe the definite articles, as *la teſte me fait mal*, my head is ill, or akes; *un tel eſt bleſsé à la teſte*, ſuch a one is hurt on his head; and not ſay *ma teſte, à ſa teſte.*

3 The definite Articles are ſet afore words importing action or exerciſe, as *Addonné au jeu*, given to play or gaming: *il aime le jeu de la paume*, hee loves tennis-play: *nous deviſons du jeu de la paume*, wee talk of tennis-play: *nous nous exerçons au jeu de la paume*, wee exerciſe our ſelves in tennis-play: ſo *jouer aux dez, à la boule, aux eſchecs*; to play at dice, at bowls, at cheſſe; *courir la bague*, to run at ring; *aller le trot*, or *au trot*, to trot; *aller le galop*, or *au galop*, to galop.

But the manner of the play or action requires the definite Article *à*, as *Sauter à joints pieds*, to leap with the feet cloſe together: *courir à bride avallee*, to run with the bridle on the horſe necke: *courir la poſte*, to ride poſte: *tirer des armes*, to fenſe or handle his weapons: *enſeigner la muſique*, to

teach

teach muſique: *tailler la pierre*, to cut or carve ſtone. And in like manner, their Nouns verbals will have the indefinite Article, as *Coureur de poſte*, a rider of poſte: *tireur d' armes*, a Fenſer: *enſeigneur de muſique*, a teacher of muſique: *tailleur de pierre*, a ſtone-cutter: *un faiſeur d' habits*, a maker of apparell.

4 Every partative ſpeech, or comparative taken partatively, is made by the definite Articles applied to the thing, as *Ceſte Dame eſt la fleur des belles*, this Lady is the flowre of faire ones: *les leçons du plus ſçavant homme de l' univerſité*, the lectures of the skilfulleſt man in the Vniverſitie: *j' ay baillé mon ouvrage à faire au plus excellent ouvrier de la ville*, I have given my work to bee done to the, or by the beſt workman of the city.

5 When we put the name of the ſpeciall kinde for the whole kinde, it is a definitive ſpeech, requiring the definite Articles; as *L' homme a eſté creé à l' image de Dieu*, man was created after the image of God: *la femme a eſté baillee à l' homme pour aide*, woman was given to man for an help: *les bouillons de la colere en l' homme produiſent de perilleux effects*, the boilings of choler in man produce dangerous effects: *Le cheval eſt propre à la guerre, comme le bœuf au labourage*, the horſe is fit for warre, as the oxe for the plough: *la proprieté du laurier eſt contre le tonnerre*, the property of the bay-tree is againſt thunder: *On attribuë une*

mer-

merveilleuſe proprieté a la palme, de ſe roidir contre le faix, a wonderfull property is attributed to the palme-tree, to reſiſt the more it is preſſed with weight: *On doute lequel eſt plus dommageable, ou profitable l'or, ou le fer*; it is doubted, which is more hurtfull or profitable of gold or iron: *la gueule en perd plus que le glaive*, the throat (that is, ſurfet) deſtroieth more than the ſword.

6 Alſo, when wee ſet before proper names ſome Epithet or Adjective, the definite Article is ſet before the Epithet, as *la ſtatue du Dictateur Ceſar, qui fit la guerre au grand Pompee*, the ſtatue of the Dictator Ceſar, who warred on the great Pompey. But if wee ſet after the proper name an Epithet or Adjective bearing note of ſpecial prerogative or preeminence, then the indefinite Article is ſet before the proper name, and the definite *le, la* after it, before the Epithet, as *la ſtatue de Ceſar le Dictateur, qui fit la guerre à Pompee le grand*, the ſtatue of Ceſar the Dictator, who made warre on Pompey the great.

7 Likewiſe, theſe phraſes are emphaticall, *Ceſar le Dictateur, Pompee le grand*, that is, which was Dictator, which had the title of great. Which muſt be noted: for when the Adjective hath not any ſuch emphaſis, but a common quality, and ſimple attribute, there needeth not the definite Article, as *Alexandre jeune & vaillant, deſconfit en battaille Darius treſpuiſant Roy de Perſe*; Alexander being

being yong and valiant, diſcomfited in battell Darius the moſt mighty King of Perſia. *Monſieur, Madame, Madamoiſelle,* doe follow that emphaticall conſtruction; as *Monſieur le Duc,* my Lord Duke; *Madame la Conteſſe,* my Lady Counteſſe; *Monſieur le ſot,* maſter ſot; *Madame la putain,* Madame or miſtreſſe whore.

8 Laſtly, when any Epithet is added to this name *Dieu,* before or after, the definite Article is uſed, as *I' adore le vray Dieu,* I worſhip the true God: *le monde eſt l' ouvrage du Dieu fort,* the world is the workmanſhip of the ſtrong God: *I' adreſſe mes priéres au Dieu vivant,* I direct my prayers to the living God: ſo *l' idole du Dieu Iupiter.* Alſo the word *ſeul,* ſet before *Dieu,* requires the definite Articles, as *le ſeul Dieu,* the onely God, *du ſeul Dieu,* of the onely God, *au ſeul Dieu,* to the onely God: but if *ſeul* come after, then uſe the indefinite, as *Dieu ſeul* God alone, *de Dieu ſeul* of God alone, *á Dieu ſeul* to God alone.

The uſe of indefinite Articles.

Firſt, they are uſed before proper names, as *la ſtatue de Ceſar qui fit la guerre á Pompee,* the ſtatue of Ceſar that made war againſt Pompey: *l' homme eſt l' image de Dieu,* man is the image of God: *adreſſez á Dieu vos prieres,* direct to God your praiers. And this Rule is generall; that all proper names of men, months, cities, kingdomes, &c. and all attributes proper to one ſole individuall,

are

are conſtrued with the indefinite Articles, as *Le Roy d' Angleterre, d' Eſpagne*, the King of England, of Spaine. *Ie viens de Paris*, I come from Paris. *Ie ſuis de Londres*, I am of London, &c. Except ſome phraſes, as when wee ſay, *Par* or *parmi l' Europe, l' Aſie, la France, l' Italie*, through or amidſt Europe, Aſia, France, Italie; alſo *á la France, á l' Europe*, to France, to Europe; and indifferently, *les villes de la France*, or *de France*, the cities of France. Alſo we ſay, *Le Tibre*, the river Tiber; *le Rhin*, the Rhine; *le Pau*, Po; *le Danube*, Danubius; *le Nil*, Nilus; and indifferently *Tamiſe* or *la Tamiſe*, the Thames: alſo *l' Apenin, les Alpes, les Pyrenees*, the Apenine, Alpes, Pyrenean mountains.

Secondly, indefinite Articles ſerve to Appellatives left in their generall ſignification, without any reſtriction; and that in phraſes generally negative, or interrogative, or conditionall, having ordinarily following them *Aucun*, *quelconque*, or ſome other equivalent to theſe; *Ie n' ay ſecours d' aucun homme*, or *d' homme qui ſoit*, I have no help of any man, *d' homme quelconque*, of any man whatſoever, *d' homme vivant*, of any man living. *Trouvez vous apparence quelconque en ce propos?* Finde you any likelihood at all in this ſpeech? *Ie ne ſçay ſi je trouveray ami quelconque*, I know not whether I ſhall finde any friend at all. *Si vous avez beſoing de choſe que je puiſſe, ne m' eſparguez pas*, if you have need of any thing that I can doe, ſpare me not, &c.

Third-

Thirdly, theſe indefinite Articles are uſed with all Pronounes whatſoever, except the Poſſeſſives *Mien, tien, ſien*; and *noſtre, voſtre, leur*, when they are abſolute; and the Relative *lequel*, whoſe Article is inſeparable.

The particle *un* a (which ſome reckon among the Articles) may indifferently be uſed or not uſed in ſuch phraſes, *Celuy eſt vray Roy*, or *un vray Roy, qui regit comme pere*, hee is a true King, who ruleth as a father. *De long travail*, or *d'un long travail, heureuſe recompence*; of a long labour, a happy recompence.

Maſculine, Feminine.

Sing. Nom. Accuſ. *un, une:* a, an.
Gen. Ablat. *d'un, d'une:* of a, or an from a, or an; with a, or an.
Dative *à un, à une:* to a, or an; at a, or an; for a, or an.

Strangers, both Engliſh and others, doe often falſely uſe the Articles; namely,

Falſe Articles.	True ones.
De le, for	*Du* before Conſonants, as *du pain*, ſome bread, *du drap*, ſome cloth. *De l'* before Vowels, as *de l' œil*, of the eye, *de l' or*, of gold, or ſome gold.
à le, for	*Au* before Conſonants, as *au Roy*, to the King, *au Chaſteau*, to the caſtle. *à l'* before Vowels, as *à l' œil, à l' homme*, to the eye, to man.

enle,

en le, for { *au, dans le, dedans le* before Consonants, as *au feu*, in the fire. / *en l', dans l', dedans l'* before Vowels, as *en l' hostel*, in the house.

Des les for *des*, as *la pudicitè des femmes*, the chastity of women.

A les for *aux* or *ès*, as *aller aux jardins*, to goe into the garden: *se pourmener ès jardins*, to walke in the gardens.

En les for *aux* and *ès*, *dans les, dedans les*, as *dans les livres, ès livres*, in books.

Vse the true, and avoid the false. You shall finde more of Articles in particular, in the syntax.

Chap. III.

Of a Noune.

NOunes are eyther Substantives; as *Homme, femme, Roy, royne*: or Adjectives; as *Prudent, prudente, Verteux, vertueuse.*

Nounes have only three Genders, Masculine, Feminine, and Common: for the knowledge of which Genders, observe the rules following:

1 All Nounes Adjectives which only end in *e* feminine, are of the common gender, that is to say, are appliable to substantives, as well of the masculine as of the feminine gender: for Neuter, the French have not, but comprehend it under the masculine. Of these, a verie great number do come from Latine Adjectives. of which some in *ilis*;

ilis; as *Facile, utile, docile, fertile, ſterile, aimable, amiable, humble, liſible, poſsible, delectable, affable, redevable recevable*, &c. ſome in *bris, ſtis, ſtus, ſtris*: as *Funebre, celebre, triſte, modeſte, celeſte, chaſte, juſte, illuſtre*, &c. ſome in *dus, dis*: as *Humide, ſolide, rude, roide, vuide, palle, ſuperbe*, &c. ſome in *plex*: as *Simple, double, triple, quadruple*, and ſo forth to *centuple*; alſo *ſonple*. ſome in *lis, lus*: as *Fidele, rebelle, imbecille*. in *acris, arius*: as *Militaire, temeraire, ordinaire, vulgaire, contraire*, &c. ſome in *icus*: as *Publicque, anticque, pudicque*, &c. whoſe maſculine may alſo indifferently be in *ic*, or *icq*; as *Politic, pudic*, &c. ſome in *er* and *rus*; as *Acre, aigre, maigre, alaigre, ſalubre, mortifére, peſtifére, alexitére, deletére, propre, ſobre, libre, yvre, pauvre, aſpre, proſpere, adultere, ſyncere, ſevere, avare, rare, ignare*. ſome in *mus, mis*: as *Extreme, intime, ferme, infirme, ſublime, quatiéme, deuxiéme, troiſiéme* &c. infinitely. and *Miſte, artiſte, ſophiſte, atheiſte, donatiſte, legiſte*, &c. and others of diverſe formes: as *Laſche, morne, ſombre, terne, borgne, bigle*, or *bitle, aveugle, jeune, ſage, foible, trouble, comble, bleſme, riche, chiche, proche, croche, courbe, ſale, louche, viſte, leſte, yvrougne, fantaſque, moite, mince, colere, mauſade, fade, malade, grave, brave*, &c.

Alſo of the common gender are all the cardinall numbers from *deux, trois, &c.* infinitely.

The ſecond ſort of Adjectives, are ſuch as have two terminations; the one maſculine, the other feminine: them of the maſculine, are ever one

one of theſe, *Eau, c, d, é, f, g, i, l, n, r, ſ, t, u, x, y.*

Such as end in *eau*, do forme their feminines in *elle*; as *Beau, belle, Gemeau* or *jumeau, gemelle* or *jumelle, nouveau, nouvelle:* and theſe alſo afore ſubſtantives beginning with a vowell, have the maſculines in *el*; as *Bel œil*, a fair eye, *Nouvel ouvrage*, a new worke.

Such as end in *C*, have their feminines in *che*, as *Sec, ſeiche. Blanc, blanche. Franc, franche:* except *Flac, ſlacque. Grec, grecque. Porc, porcque*, and ſuch as end in *ic*, as *Ruſtic, ruſticque*, &c.

In *d*, taketh *e* to it: as *Grand, grande. Rond, ronde. Froid, froide*, &c. Except *Nud, nuë.*

In *é* taketh alſo *e*, as *Aimé, aimee. Donné, donnee.*

In *f* doe change the ſame into *ve*, as *Vif, vive*, or (after ſome) *Vifve, veuf, veuve* or *veufve. Neuf, neuve. Grief, griéve. Brief, briéve. Souëf, ſoüeve*, &c. Here note the difference between *Neuf* and *Nouveau*; that *Neuf* is ſaid of things newly made by art, and not yet put to uſe, as *des ſouliers neufs*, new ſhooes; *une maiſon neuve*, a new houſe. *Nouveau* is ſaid of things when they firſt come to evidẽce, or ſhew themſelves, as *Des fruits nouveaux*, new fruits; *du vin nouveau*, new wine; *une nouvelle façon d' habits*, a new faſhion of apparell; *un livre nouveau*, a new book.

In *g*, as *long longue.*

In *i* and *y* they take *e*, as *Ioli jolie, ami amie, nourri nourrie, flori florie.*

In

In *L* commonly adde to *le*, as *Gentil, gentille. Vermeil, vermeille. Pareil, pareille:* yet where *l* is not liquid, a ſingle *l* may ſerve; as *General, generale. Eternel, eternele,* &c. except *Tel, telle. Quel, quelle.*

In *n*, ſuch as are in *on*, adde to *ne*, as *Bon, bonne. Felon, felonne. Mignon, mignonne:* the others double not the *n*, as *Chreſtien, chreſtiéne. Certain, certaine. Benin, benigne. Fin, fine. Plein, pleine. Mien, miéne,* &c.

In *S*, when *i* comes afore it, adde to *e*, as *Gris, griſe. Bis, biſe. Niais, niaiſe. Mauvais, mauvaiſe:* except *Frais, fraiche. Eſpais, eſpaiſſe. Lis, liſe*, and *liſſe.* when another vowell commeth before it, the *s* is doubled: as *Bas, baſſe. Gras, graſſe. Gros, groſſe. Expres, expreſſe:* except *Ras, raſe*, & all the participles, *Clos, cloſe*, &c.

In *T*, ſuch as are in *et*, doe commonly double the *t*, as *Net, nette. Complet, complette.* the other terminations have but a ſingle *t*, as *Prudent, prudente. Eſtroit, eſtroite. Subit, ſubite. Sot, ſote. Hault, haulte*, &c.

In *u*, taketh *e* to it, as *Pointu pointuë. Velu veluë*, ſo *aiguë, menuë, fueilluë*, &c.

In *X*, it is changed into *ſe*, as *Heureux, heureuſe, jaloux, jalouſe*; Except *Doux douce, faux fauce* or *fauſſe, roux rouſſe* or *rouce, perplex perplexe.*

Many ſubſtantives maſculine doe forme from them others feminine, according to the rules a-

foregoing of adiectives, as *Couſin couſine, Voiſin voiſine, Conſeiller conſelliere, Marchand marchande, Mercier merciere, François françoiſe, Anglois angloiſe, Chien chienne, Lion lionne, Puceau pucelle, Marquereau marquerelle, Nourriſſon nourriſſonne*, uſed both actively and paſſively, *Nourrice* onely actively, and *Nourricier nourriciere* actively, &c. which alſo ſerve for adiectives if occaſion ſerve, as *ville marchande*, a marchant towne.

Alſo ſuch as end in *Eur*, are formed diverſly, as into *euſe, eſſe, ice*, &c. as *Menteur menteuſe & mentereſſe, Demandeur demandeuſe & demandereſſe, Sauveur ſauveuſe ſauvereſſe, Pecheur pechereſſe, Flateur flateuſe, Procureur procureſſe & procuratrice, Tuteur tutrice, Protecteur protectrice, Inventeur inventrice, Curateur curatrice, Dominateur dominatrice, Empereur Imperatrice & empericre*; Alſo *Prieur prieure, Serviteur ſervante, Governeur governante.*

Such as end in *e*, commonly change it into *eſſe*, as *Maiſtre maiſtreſſe, Hoſte hoſteſſe, Prince princeſſe, Comte comteſſe, Preſtre preſtreſſe, Moine moineſſe, Abbè abbeſſe*; and though *yvrongne, borgne, & beliſtre* be common, yet wee ſay alſo *yvrongneſſe, borgneſſe, beliſtreſſe* for the feminine; alſo we forme *Clerc, clergeſſe, Duc ducheſſe, Larron larronne & larronneſſe, Dieu deeſſe.* Moreover we forme *Roy roine & reine, Loup louve, renard renarde*, &c.

But the females of ſome beaſtes, have not their names formed from them of their males, as *Cheval*

val an horſe, *jument* or *cavale* a mare, *hongre*, a gelded horſe, *guildin* an Engliſh guelding, *poulin* or *poulain* a coult, *Cerf* a ſtagge, *biche* a hinde; *Sanglier* a wild Bore, *Laye* a wild ſow, *Marcaſſin* a grice or young boare; *Verrat* a tame boare, *truye* a ſow, *Porc* or *porceau*, a hogge, *cochon* a pig, and *coche*, a ſow-pigge, or ſometime a ſow ſuckling her pigs; *Bouc*, a hee-goate, *Chevre*, a ſhee-goate, *Chevreau*, a kid; *Belier*, a ramme, *oüaille* or *brebis*, an ewe, *agneau*, a lambe, *Mouton*, a weather; *Taureau*, a bull, *vache*, a cow, *veau*, a calfe, *Bœuf*, an oxe, *boeveau*, a bullocke, *geniſſe*, a heifer; *Iars*, a Gander. *Oye*, a Gooſe. *Oyſon*, a Goſlin or greene Gooſe. *Coq*, a Cock. *Poule*, a Hen, *Poulet*, a Cockrell or Pullet. *Chapon*, a Capon. *Hutaudeau*, a Caponnet, or a yong Capon. *Pouſsin* ſignifieth not only a Chicken, but alſo the yongones of all Birds, as of an Eagle, Raven, &c.

Genders of Nounes Subſtantives.

TO know the genders of Subſtantives, ſuch as have good skill in the Latine tongue, may obſerve this for a generall rule, That they have for the moſt part, eſpecially thoſe that are derived from the Latine, the ſame gender as they have in Latine, that is, the Maſculines and Neuters in Latine are Maſculines in French, and the Feminine in Latine is the ſame in French. This rule hath ſome exceptions, yet may leade the learner

(desirous of expedition) verie farre in this point.

But he which desireth a more exact guide, must examine well the rules following:

1 Of the Masculine gender are the names of Men; as *Pierre*, Peter; *Iaques*, Iames: of Angels, as *Gabriel:* of Divels and of fabulous gods, as *Astarot*, *Iupiter:* of the Offices of men, as *Roy*, *evesque*, a Bishop, or *Fevre*, a Goldsmith. *Chantre*, a singing man, &c. of Moneths, as *Ianuier:* of Dayes, as *Dimanche*, Sunday: of Trees, as *Chesne*, an Oake. *Fresne*, an Ash, &c. except *Palme*, a Palme tree. *Vigne*, a Vine. *Espine*, a Thorne. *Ronce*, a Bramble. *Bourdaine*, a low French hedge-tree so cald; *Yeuse*, holm Oke, feminines. Of Monies or coin, as *Escu*, a crowne. *Franc*, a piece of twentie Sous. except *Pistole*, a Pistolet. *Portugaise*, *Iocondale*, a Doller. *Reale*, a Ryall. *Maille*, halfe a Denier, feminines.

Or store

2 Of the Masculine Gender also are all Adjectives made Substantives, as *le long*, *le large*, *le double*, *le triple*, *le haut*, *le bas*, &c. the long, the large, &c. also the Infinitives of Verbs taking the nature of Substantives, as *le boire*, drinking; *le manger*, eating; *le dormir*, sleeping, &c. also Adverbs, *le pis*, the worse or worst; *le mieulx*, the better or best; *le plus*, the more or most; *le moins*, the lesse or least, &c. *Le trop d' aise mondaine, & le peu de soin de servir Dieu, emmene plusieurs à perdition:* Too much worldly ease, and the little care to serve God, brings many to destruction.

3 Con-

3 Contrariwiſe, of the Feminine Gender are all names of women, as *Aliſon*, Alice; *Ieanne*, Iane or Ioan, &c. of poeticall goddeſſes, Nymphs and muſes, as *Iunon*, *Pallas*, *Calliope*, *Calliſto*, &c. of offices attributed to women, as *Roine*, a Queen; *Nymphe*, a Nymph; *Ducheſſe*, a Dutcheſſe; *lingere*, a ſeamſter, &c. of fruits, as *Ceriſe*, a cherrie; *groiſelle*, a gooſeberry; *noix*, a walnut, &c. Except *Coing*, *abricot*, *citron*, *limon*, *marron*, *raiſin*, *citrangule*, *melon*, *concombre*, *pepon*, *poivre*, *gingembre*, *genievre*, *naveau*, *raifort*, *porreau*, *oingnon*, *gland*; all Maſculines.

4 Of the Feminine Gender alſo are all the names of vertues, as *force*, ſtrength; *prudence*, prudence, &c. and of qualities (though ſome of them come of Latine Maſculines in *or*) as *douleur* griefe, *chaleur* heat, *hauteur* height, *peſanteur* heavineſſe or weight, &c. Except *Heur*, *malheur*, *cœur*, *pleur*, *honneur*, *labeur*, Maſc. and *erreur*, *humeur*, Common. Alſo except Verbals Actives in *eur*, as *Autheur*, *Docteur*, &c. The proper names of countries and cities conſidered in themſelves, doe follow their terminations, as *Dannemarc*, *Poitou*, *Orleans*, *Rouën*, &c. are Maſculine becauſe of their Maſculine termination; *Bretagne*, *France*, *Toloſe*, Feminines.

5 To knowe then the Genders of Nounes by their terminations, obſerve, that ſuch as end in *b*, *c*, *d*, and *é* Maſculine, are

Maſc. as *Plomb*, *ſac*, *bec*, *nid*, *bord*, *prè*, *congé*, &c.

Except all ſuch as end in *té* and *tié*, coming from Latine words in *tas* and *tia*, as *Bonté*, *beauté*, *pitié*, *moitié*, &c. which are Feminines: yet *Eſté*, *coſté*, and *paſté*, are Maſculines; and *Duché*, *Comté*, *Eveſché*, *Archeveſché*, are common.

Be In *Be* Fem. as *Robbe*, *jambe*, *fourbe*, &c. except *Globe*, *garbe*, *limbe*, *verbe*, *proverbe*, Maſc.

Ce In *Ce* Fem. as *Grace*, *piece*, *lice*, *croce*, *puce*, *apparence*, *herce*, *eſcorce*, *ſource*, *ſauce*, &c. except *pouce*, *prepuce*, *commerce*, *divorce*, *ſilence*, *negoce*, all in *ice*, as *benefice*, *edifice*, *caprice*, *vice*, *ſacrifice*, *exercice*, *precipice*, *ſervice*, Maſculines; and *bonace*, *negoce*, *office* and *populace*, Common.

De In *De* Fem. as *Eſtoccade*, *mode*, *ride*, *bande*, *ſonde*, *corde*, *bourde*, *chiquenaude*, &c. except *Exorde*, *coude*, *prelude*, *remede*, *monde*, *ſubſide*, Maſc. and *aide*, *camerade*, *garde*, and all in *ide*, as *guide*, *homicide*, *parricide*, Common.

ée In *ée* Fem. as *Allée*, *chauſsée*, *pipée*, &c. Except *Trophee*, Maſc.

Fe In *Fe*, *phe* Fem. as *Grife*, *eſtoffe*, *coiffe*, *piaffe*, *greffe*, & a graffe, &c. except *Griffe* a kinde of dog, *Greffe* *Ph* the place of a Regiſters Office, *triomphe*, *Epitaphe*, *philoſophe*.

Ge In *Ge* Fem. as *vandange*, *eſponge*, *targe*, *gorge*, *courge*, *ſauge*, *cage*, *plage*, *image*, *aage*, *page* the page of a leaf, *rage*, *neige*, &c. except all others (ſaving the above-recited) ending in *age*, *ege*, *iege* and *eige*, as *gage*, *heritage*, *herbage*, *privilége*, *manége*, *piége*, *pleige*, &c.

&c. Maſc. except alſo *Ange, lange, change, linge, ſinge, cierge, concierge, ſonge, orge, vouge, juge, refuge, litige, veſtige, preſtige, prodige, horloge, menſonge,* Maſc.

In *Che* Fem. as *Gaſche, meſche,* &c. except *A-croſtiche, panache, manche,* the haft or handle of a thing, *trenche-plume,* maſc. *Accroche, coche, friche,* common. *che*

In *ie* Fem. as *Scie, maladie,* &c. *Ie*

In *Le* Fem. as *Table, bale, gabelle, bible, ſangle, perle, temple,* the temples of the head; *Colle, capriole, cedule, boucle, mouſle, voile* a Sayle, *aigle, eſpingle, ongle, ville, meule,* &c. Except *Buſle, branſle, cable, conventicule, angle, cercle, crocodile, comble, crible, couvercle, domicile, froncle, habitacle, haſle, maſle, merle, miracle, muſcle, poiſle* a Stove. *mufle, meufle, moule, module, obſtacle, oracle, preambule, protocole, poiſle* a Canopie. *pinacle, rable, ruble, roole* or *roule, ſable, ſeigle, ſiecle, ſcrupule, ſouſle, ſtyle, ſpectacle, tabernacle, temple* a temple. *trouble, voile,* a vaile, *zele,* maſculines. *example, idole, obole,* common. *Le*

In *me* Fem. as *Ame, paume. cime, eſcume, ſomme,* a ſumme, *arme, forme, ferme.* &c. Except *Anagramme. apophthegme, axiome, abiſme, alarme, blaſme, bapteſme, bitume, baulme, catechiſme, cataplaſme, carme, charme, crime. empyreume, phantaſme,* or *fantaſme,* or *fantoſme, flegme,* or *phlegme, germe, gendarme, homme, legume, pſalme, quareſme, regime, ſynonyme, ſomme,* ſleepe. *ſophiſme, royaume, terme, tome, volume, poëme,* maſc. *me*

Ne In *ne* Fem. as *Cane, ſepmaine*, &c. Except *Antimoine, crane, capricorne, cerne, cigne, ſigne, peigne, proſne, regne, patrimoine, aſne, throſne, yvrongne.*

Pe In *pe* Fem. as *Nape, pipe*, &c. Except *Principe, jaſpe, creſpe.*

Re In *re* Fem. as *Tare, cire, pecore, froidure, cendre, eſguiere, balaffre, chambre, anchre, feneſtre*, &c. Except *Ambre, aire*, a neſt, *antre, auditoire, affaire, Baptiſtere, beurre, biévre, Characte're, cancre, chancre, chanure, chapitre, catharre, cimetiére, cimeterre, centre, ciboire, cheveſtre, cidre, chifre, ciſtre*, or *ſiſtre, cloiſtre, clyſtere, coffre, congre, conſiſtoire, coriandre, cuivre, coutre, doüaire, empire, eſclandre, emplaſtre, feurre*, or *foarre, feutre, fifre, goufre, genre, gendre, gingembre, goinfre, geniévre, havre, hongre, impropere, luſtre, lierre, liévre, luminaire, livre*, a booke, *Maſſacre, marbre, martyre, murmure, myſtere, nombre, oratoire, opprobre, parterre, plaſtre, populaire pore, pourpre poyvre, pulpitre, offre, ordre, quarre, repaire, regiſtre, reiſtre, ruſtre, ſalaire, ſire, ſceptre, ſepulchre, ſuaire, ſoufre*, or *ſouphre, ſommaire, ſucre, tertre, timbre, tiltre, territoire, theatre, tigre, tonnere, ventre, veſpre, verre, vinaigre, vitupere, ulcere*, maſc. *Arbitre, anceſtre, navire*, common.

Se In *ſe* Fem. as *Chemiſe, choſe, ruſe*, &c. Except *vaſe, dioceſe, aiſe*, maſc.

Te In *te* Fem. as *Rate, ſavatte, pinette*, &c. Except *Acte, architecte, compte, conte, geſte, giſte, haſte*, a ſpit; *hoſte, pretexte, texte, tumulte, pilote, poſte*, for *poſtillon*,

lon. artiſte. ſophiſte.

In *ue* & *ve* Fem. as *Dague, caſague, pigue, bave: greve: rue: jouë.* Except *Catalogue: maſque: flaſque: cantique: colloque, dogue: prologue: dialogue: maigue: obeliſque, conclaue, eunuque. pedagogue. fleuve. glaive,* maſc. & *Begue, prodigue.* com. *ue Ve*

In *ye* Fem. as *Haye, playe, pluye,* &c. Except *ſaye.* *Ye*

In *f, g, h,* maſc. as *Chef, eſquif, rang, joug, alphabeth,* &c. Except *Clef, nef, ſoif,* feminines. *f, g, & h*

In *i, y, l,* & *m,* maſc. as *Souci, tournoy, bal, renom,* &c. Except *merci, loy, foy, paroy, faim,* fem. *i, y, l, m.*

In *n* maſc. as *Caban, matroquin.* &c. Except verballs in *çon, ſon,* & *ion* come from latins in *io,* as *contagion, opinion, occaſion, paſſion, probation, complexion,* and others of like forme, as *Leçon, façon, rançon, tançon, mariſſon, moiſſon, guariſſon, raiſon, oraiſon, maiſon, priſon, trahiſon, demangeaiſon, venaiſon, fenaiſon, foiſon, paſmoiſon, cloiſon, boiſſon;* alſo *main, nonnain, fin, putain.* *N*

In *p, q, r,* maſc. as *Drap, coup, coq, acier, gibier,* &c. Except *Mer, cour, chair, tour,* a tower, *cuillier,* and ſubſtantives of quality and quantitie in *eur,* as *douleur, douceur, faveur, noirceur, langueur, largeur,* fem. *Amour,* common. *p, q, r.*

In *ſ, t, u,* maſc. as *Lacs, frimas, rabat, buffet, lieu, trou,* &c. Except *Souris, brebis, vis,* a ſtaire or ſpindle of a preſſe, *fois, dent, gent, mort, jument, nuict, hart, part, foreſt, maict, vertu, glu, peau, eau, tribu.* fem. *ſ, t, u.*

In

X In *x* Fem. as *Poix, noix, paix, voix, croix, toux*, &c. Except *faix, couroux, prix*, masc.

Z In *z* masc. as *Nez*, &c.

It appeareth that some in changing their signification, do also change gender, as these:

Tour, a turne, masc. / a tower, fem.
Coche, a coach: masc. / a sow, fem.
Satyre, a fabulous woodgod, masc. / a Poem, fe.
Manche, a handle, masc. / a sleeve, feminine.
Voile, a vaile, masc. / a saile, fem:
Greffe, a place where the Registers office is kept: masc. / a graffe, fem.
Temple, a temple, or Church, masculine. / the temples of the head, fem.
Faiſte, the top of any thing, masc. / *Feſte*, a feast, or holy-day, fem. — of different orthography.
Haſte, a spit, masc. / hast, fem.
Page, a page or youth, mas. / a side of a leafe, fem.
Livre, a book, masc. / a poũd, feminine.
Poiſle, a canopie, or a stove, masc. / a frying-pan, fem.
Periode, for the end or declining of a thing, mas. / for the point in a sentence, fem.
Trompette, a trumpetter, masc, & a trumpet, fem.
Enſeigne, an Ensigne-bearer, masc. and the Ensigne

ſigne it ſelfe, fem. So *Cornette*, a Cornet of horſe, *Sentinelle*, a ſentinell, *Guette*, a watch, *Guide*, a guide, &c. referred both to the perſon, and to the thing.

Compariſon.

THe comparative degree, both of Nounes and Adverbs, is formed by adding *Plus* to the poſitive; and the ſuperlative by adding *Tres* afore: as *Iuſte, plus juſte, treſiuſte: Chaſte, plus chaſte, treſchaſte*: ſo the adverbs, *Iuſtement, plus juſtement, treſiuſtement*. Theſe following alter their comparative, but not the ſuperlative.

	Good.	well.	evill.	ill.
Poſitive,	*Bon,*	*Bien.*	*Mauvais,*	*Mal.*
Compa- rative,	*Meilleur, mieux,*		*Pire,*	*Pis,*
Superla- tive.	*Tresbon.*	*Tresbien.*	*Treſmavais,*	*treſmal,*

Little, ſmall, little, few.
Poſ. *Petit.* *Peu.*
Com. *Moindre, moins,*
Sup. *Treſpetit, Treſpeu.*

We may ſay alſo in the comparative *plus mauvais, plus petit, plus mal,* or *pirement*; but not *plus bon*, nor *plus bien*, nor *plus peu*; for *Meilleur, mieux*, and *Moins* are unvariable.

Bien, trop, beaucoup, par trop, ſerve before comparatives, to increaſe their force, as *longè*, & *multò* with the Latins; *Tu es trop plus heureux que ſage*, thou art much more happy than wiſe. *Ceſar fut bien*

bien plus hardi que Pompee, Ceſar was farre more valiant than Pompey.

Homme de Bien, Femme de bien, receive both the comparative and ſuperlative forme, as *Plus homme de bien*, a more honeſt man, *treſhomme de bien*, a moſt honeſt man, *tresfemme de bien*, a moſt honeſt woman.

Tous & *toutes*, all receive the adjunction of *Treſ*, as if they were ſuperlatives, as *Treſtous*, *treſtoutes*, all, and every one.

Grandiſſime is often uſed for *treſgrand*; and ſometime we ſay, *Doctiſſime*; alſo wee ſay to Princes, *Sereniſſime*, *illuſtriſſime*, and to Prelates *Reverendiſſime*.

Of Diminutives.

MAny nounes, both ſubſtantives and adjectives, receive a diminitive forme.

Such as end in *n*, *t*, *r*, *e*, *d*, doe make their diminutives in *et*, or *eau*; as *Iardin*, a garden, *jardinet*, a little garden, *Garſon*, a boy, *garſonnet garſonneau*, a little boy, *fin finet*, *flateur flatereau*, *Procureur*, *procuraceau*, *advocat*, *advocaceau*, *arbre*, *arbriſſeau*, *verme*, *vermiſſeau*, *Larron*, *larronneau*, *rouge*, *rouget*, and (with ſub-diminution) *Brun*, *bruneau*, *brunelet*, *mignard*, *mignardet*, *mignardelet*, *ſergent*, *ſergenteau*, *ſergentelet*, *enfant*, *enfançon*, *enfantelet*, *homme*, *hommeau*, *hommet*, *hommelet*.

In *ier* changeth into *ot*, as *Mercier*, *mercerot*, *archier*

chier, archerot, &c. Alſo *Chien cagnot.*

Eau changeth into *let*, as *Couteau, coutelet, manteau, mantelet, chaſteau, chaſtelet.*

C into *chet*, as *Sac ſachet, blanc, blanchet, blanchelet.*

S or *x* into *ſet, ſelet*, as *Gras, graſſet, graſſelet.*

Some into *on*, as *Clerc clergeon, haim hameçon, Eſcu, eſcuſſon, aſne, aſnon, chat, chaton.*

Nounes feminines are formed into *ette*, as *Femme femmette femmelette, maiſon maiſonnette*, &c. and ſome few into *elle*, as *Ruë, ruëlle, roue, rouëlle, tonne, tonnelle, prune, prunelle.* Proper names receive a diminutive forme; ſo becomming ruſticall, or as nicke-names, as *Iaques* Iames, *Iacquet* & fem. *Iacquette, Iean* Iohn *Ianot, Ianin* (applyed to a cuckold) & fem. *Ianneton, Pierre* Peter, *Perrot*, & fem. *Perrette Perrichon; Philippes philippot, Marguerite margot, Charles charlot charlette*, &c.

We often alſo expreſſe the diminutive forme by the words *Petit, petite*, little, as *Petit homme, petite femme*; and with both, as *Petit livret*, a little ſmall booke, *petit cavallot, petit larroneau, petit yvrongnet, petit pendardeau.*

The plurall number of Nounes.

THe plurall number of Nonnes is formed, by adding *ſ, x*, or *z*, to the ſingular; thus:

Such as end in *ay, ou, oy, uy, e*, fem. *f, g, i, m, n, p, q, r, t, u*, take *s*, to make them pluralls, as *Ray, rais.*

Roy

Roy rois, Clou clous, Estuy estuis, &c. changing *y* into *i*.

All in *é* masculine adde to *z*, as *Bonté bontez, Aimé aimez*.

Nounes in *al, ail, el, eul, ouïl* change the *l* into *ux*, or *x*, as *Mal maux, Ail aux, Bail baux, travail travaux, canal canaux, cheval chevaux, ciel cieux, viel vieux* (which is also sometime used for singular) *Ayeul ayeux, Genoüil genoux, Verroüil verroux; Oeil yeux*, &c.

Nounes in *eau, eu*, take *x* to make them pluralls, as *Eau eaux, joyau joyaux, jeu jeux, feu feux, lieu lieux*.

Such as end in *s, x, z* in the singular, change not in the plurall, as *Bas, ris, gros, divers, Palais, courroux, jaloux, nez*, &c.

Note that all singulars in *nt*, may change their *t* into *s*, as *Prudent prudens, sçavant sçavans*.

Lastly, some nounes are onely singulars, as *Laict, miel, chair, liberalité, fiel, sel, mouſtarde, cholere, ancre, foy, salut*; and some onely pluralls, as *Ciseaux, tenailles, pincettes, mouchettes, nopces, ancestres, funerailles, obseques*.

The declension of Nounes.

NOunes are declined onely by application of the Articles, as before in the Articles is shewed; but for the better understanding of the learner, take here the examples, and first of a substantive integral, beginning with a consonât.

Mas-

Masculine.

	Singular,	Plurall,
Nomi & *Accuſ,*	*Roy*, King. / *un roy*, a King. / *le roy*, the King.	*Roys* / *des rois* } Kings. / *les rois*, the Kings.
Genit. & *Ablat.*	*de Roy* / *d'un roy*, } of a king. / *du roy*, of the king.	*de Rois*, of kings. / *des rois*, of the kings.
Dati.	*à Roy* / *à un roy* } to a king. / *au roy*, to the king.	*à Rois*, / *à des rois*, } to kings / *aux rois*, to the kings
Voc.	*ô Roy*, ô king / *ô le roy*, ô the king.	*ô Rois*, ô kings. / *ô les rois*, ô the kings

Feminine.

	Singular,	Plurall,
Nom & *Accu.*	*Femme*, woman. / *une femme*, a womã. / *la femme*, the womã.	*Femmes*, } weomen, / *des fẽmes* / *les fẽmes*, the weomẽ.
Gen. & *Ablat.*	*de femme*, womans, / *d'une femme*, of a womã / *de la femme*, of a womã.	*de fẽmes*, of wom. / *des femmes*, of the women.
Dat.	*à femme*, to woman, / *à une femme*, to a woman / *à la femme*, to the woman.	*à femmes* / *à des fem-* } to women. / *mes*, / *aux femmes*, to the weomen.
Vo.	*ô femme*, ô woman. / *ô la femme*, ô the womã	*ô femmes*, ô weomen / *ô les femmes*, ô the women

An

An example of a maſculine noune, beginning with a vowell.

Nominat. & *Accuſat.*	*Arbre*, tree *un arbre*, a tree. *l'arbre*, the tree.	*Gen.* & *Abl.*	*d'arbre*, of tree. *d'un arbre*, of a tree. *de l'arbre*, of the tree.

Dat. *à arbre*, *à un arbre*, to a tree.
à l'arbre, to the tree.

Secondly, for ſubſtances and things conſidered by parts and portions, and bearing the name of the whole, follow theſe examples:

Nom. & *Accuſ.*	*Or*, *de l'or*	gold, or ſome gold
	l'or, the gold.	
	blé, *du blé*	Corne, or ſome corn.
	le ble, the corne.	
	paille, *de la pailles*	ſtraw, or ſome ſtraw.
	La paille, the ſtraw.	
Genit. & *Ablat.*	*d' or*, of, or from gold.	
	de l'or of the, or from the gold.	
	blé, of, or from corne.	
	du blé, of the, or from the corne.	
	de paille, of, or from ſtraw.	
	de la paille, of the, from the ſtraw.	
Dative.	*à or*, to, or at gold.	
	à de l'or, to ſome gold.	
	à l'or, to the gold.	

à blé

Dat. *à blé*, to corne.
à du blé, to ſome corne.
au blé, to the corne.
à paille, to ſtraw.
à de la paille, to ſome ſtraw.
à la paille, to the ſtraw.

The plurals follow, in all points, the examples above propounded: for in all nounes, the articles plurall are alike. Adjectives ſet afore ſubſtantives, are (as before in the articles is taught) articled with *à* & *de* only, as *c'eſt de bon blé*, it is good corne, *j'ay parle à de vertueux princes*, I have ſpoken to vertuous Princes.

Tout the ſubſtantive is thus declined in the ſingular number onely: *Tout*, all, or whole, *un tout*, a totall or whole, *le tout*, the whole, *de tout*, *d'un tout*, of a whole, *du tout*, of the whole, *à tout*, *à un tout*, to a whole, *au tout*, to the whole. The adjective, thus: *Tout*, all, *de tout*, of all, *à tout*, to all, *Tous*, all, *de tous*, of all, *à tous*, to all. ſo fem. *Toute*, *de toute*, *à toute*, *Toutes*, *de toutes*, *à toutes*. Alſo *un* is thus declined: *un*, one, *l'un*, the one, *d'un*, of one, *de l'un*, of the one, *à un*, to one, *à l'un*, to the one; pl. *uns*, ſome, *les uns*, ſome; *d'uns*, *des uns*, of ſome; *à uns*, *aux uns*, to ſome: ſo the feminine *une*.

Deux, *trois*, *quatre*, &c. taken ſubſtantively, for the character of their number, admit an article before them; as *un deux*, a two, *le deux*, the two,

meaning the figure of 2. ſo *un trois*, or *le trois*, is three, *un quatre*, or *le quatre*, is 4, &c. But put in the plurall, they are adjectives, articled thus: *Deux, les deux, de deux, des deux, à deux, aux deux:* and ſo of the others.

Of nounes of number.

THe Cardinal numbers are theſe, *un*, maſc, *une*, fem. *deux*, 2. *trois*, 3. *quatre*, 4. *cinq*, 5. *ſix*, 6. *ſept*, 7. *huict*, 8. *neuf*, 9. *dix*, 10. *onze*, 11. *douze*, 12. *treize*, 13 *quatorze*, 14. *quinze*, 15. *ſeize*, 16. *dixſept*, ſeventeene, *dixhuit*, eighteene, *dixneuf*, nineteene, *vingt*, twenty, *vingt & un*, twenty one, &c. *trente*, thirty; *quarante*, 40. *cinquante*, fifty; *ſoixante*, ſixtie, or threeſcore; *ſeptante*, ſeventie, or *ſoixante* and *dix*, threeſcore and ten, *huitante*, or *octante*, eightie, or *quatre vingts*, foureſcore; *nonante*, ninety; or *quatre vingts & dix*, foureſcore and tenne; *Cent*, an hundred; *deux cens*, two hundred; &c. *Mille*, a thouſand, *deux mille*, two thouſand, &c. *un million*, a million, *dix millions*, ten millions, *un milliard*, or *milliace*, a thouſand millions. Where you ſee that *vingt*, *ceut*, *million*, and *milliard*, admit the plurall forme, as *ſix vingts*, ſixe ſcore, *trois cens*, three hundred, *ſept millions*, ſeven millions, &c. *Cent* is ſometimes a ſubſtantive, as *un cent d'œufs*, an hundred of egges; *Mille* is ever an adjective, as *mille hommes*, a thouſand men; but *millier* is a ſubſtantive, as *un millier d'hommes*, a thouſand

ſand of men: *Million* & *milliard*, *milliace*, are alwayes ſubſtantives.

Ordinall numbers are *Premier premiere*, firſt; *Second ſeconde*, or *deuxième*, ſecond; *Tiers tierce*, or *troiſième*, third; *Quart quarte*, or *quatrième*, fourth; *Quint quinte* or *cinquiéme*, fift; *Sixiéme*, ſixt, *Septiéme*, &c. infinitely, made of the Cardinall by putting to *iéme* or *ieſme*; all which, that ſo end, are of the common gender.

Proportionall, as *Simple*, *double*, *triple*, *quadruple*, or *quatruple*, made of the Latine, by omitting the *x*. Collectives, as *Quatrain*, *ſixain*, *dixain*, &c. Adverbiall, as *une fois*, once, *deux fois*, twice, *trois fois*, thrice; *quatre fois*, foure times, &c.

Chap. IV.

Of a Pronoune.

PRonounes perſonals are *Ie moy*, *tu toy*, *il luy*, *elle*, *Soy*, *&*, *moy-meſme*, *toy-meſme*, *ſoy-meſme*.

Demonſtratives, *Luy*, *elle*, *ce*, *ceſte*, *celuy*, *celle*, *ceſtuy* or *cetuy*, *cetuy-cy*, *cette-cy*, *cetuy-là*, *cette-là*, *celuy-cy*, *celuy-la*, *celle-là*, *cecy*, *cela*.

Poſſeſſives, *Mon ma*, *ton ta*, *ſon ſa*, *mien mienne*, *tien tienne*, *ſien ſienne*, *noſtre*, *voſtre*, *leur*. Relatives and interrogatives, *Luy*, *elle*, *iceluy*, *icelle*, *qui*, *que*, *quoy*, *quel*, *quelle*, *lequel*, *laquelle*, and the participles relatives, *y*, *en*, *dont*. Indefinits, *quelque*, *quelcun*, *quelcune*, *aucun aucune*, *chaque chacun*, *chacune*, *quiconque*, *quelconque*, *autre*, *autruy*, *nul nulle*,

and *pas-un*, *pas-une*, *perſonne*.

Pronounes have two ſorts of caſes; the conjunctive, and the abſolute; the conjunctive are joyned with verbs or nounes ſubſtantives, as *Il eſt*, he is, *cette femme*, this woman; the abſolute are uſed alone abſolutely, or in anſwer of a queſtion, as *qui a fait cela?* who hath done that? *luy*, he. *Voilà une belle maiſon*, there is a faire houſe: *C'eſt la noſtre*, it is ours. Where you may note, that the conjunctive nominatives, admit no article, but the abſolute of poſſeſſives doe.

Perſonall pronounes are of the common gender, and are thus declined.

The firſt perſon, *Ie* and *moy*, I.

	Conjunct.	*abſolut.*		*Conj.*	*abſo.*
Sing.	*Nomi. Ie:*	*Moy*	Pl.	*Nous*,	*nous*
	Gen. Abl.	*de moy,*			*de nous.*
	Da. Me,	*moy*, *à moy*		*Nous:*	*à nous.*
	Accu.	*Me*, *moy*,		*Nous:*	*nous.*
	Voca.	*ô Moy.*			*ô nous.*

The ſecond perſon, *Tu* and *toy*, thou.

	Conjunct.	*Abſol.*		*Conjun.*	*Abſol.*
Sin.	*Nom.*	*Tu: toy,*	Pl.	*Vous.*	*vous.*
	Gen. Abl	*de Toy,*			*de vous.*
	Dat. te,	*toy*, *à toy,*		*Vous:*	*à vous,*
	Accu.	*Te*, *Toy,*		*Vous;*	*vous,*
	Voc.	*ô Toy.*			*ô vous.*

The

	Conjunct. absolut.		Conjunct. Absol
Sin.	Nomi. Il: luy,	Pl.	Ils : eux,
	Gen. Abl. de luy.		d'eux.
	Dat. luy ; à luy.		leur, à eux,
	Accu. le : luy.		les : eux
	Voc. O luy.		ô eux.

The third perſon *il, luy*, he, maſculine; and *elle*, ſhee, feminine.

	Conjun. abſol.		Coniun. abſo.
Sin.	Nomi. Elle : elle.	Pl.	Elles , elles,
	Ge. Abl. d'elle.		d'elles.
	Dati. luy, à elle,		leur ; à elles.
	Accuſ. la : elle,		les ; elles,
	Voc. ô elle.		ô elles.

Theſe nominatives, *Ie, tu, il, nous, vous, ils*, are ſet afore verbs perſonalls, to diſtinguiſh their perſons, as *Ie croy en Dieu*, I beleeve in God, *tu lis l'evangile*, thou readeſt the Goſpell, &c. And we cannot ſay, *Moy, croy, toy lis:* but we may ſay, *Toy, tu lis*, thou, thou readeſt; *Moy, Ie croy*, I, I beleeve.

Note, that *Il* is ſometimes neuter, being referred to no perſon, but ſet afore verbes imperſonalls, and is engliſhed, It, or there: *Il eſt temps*, it istime. *Il n'y a perſonne*, there is no body.

So *On*, ſet afore all third perſons ſingular of verbes, makes them (as it were) imperſonalls paſſive, *On en parle par tout*, It is ſpoken of every where; Men ſpeake, or They ſpeake of it every where.

Leur ſet before a Verb, is the Dative plurall, above expreſſed, and engliſhed Them, or to them; but before any other, is the Poſſeſſive Their, or theirs.

When we ſpeak with reverence or reſpect, we uſe *vous*, and not *tu*, as *Vous me faites plaiſir*, you doe mé pleaſure. Yet (as in Engliſh) to God wee uſe the ſecond perſon ſingular *tu* and *toy*; alſo to our familiar friends; or when wee ſpeak to our inferiours, or in diſdain and anger.

The reciprocall *ſui*, *de ſoy* of himſelfe, of her ſelf, or of it ſelf, is thus declined:

		Conjunct.	Abſol.
Singular. & Plurall.	Gen. and Ablat.		*de ſoy.*
	Dative,	*Se*;	*ſoy, à ſoy.*
	Accuſat.	*ſe,*	*ſoy.*

Demonſtratives, thus:

Ce and *ceſt*, or *cet*, This; Maſculine.

		Conjunct.		Conjunct.	
Sing.	Nom. Accuſ.	*Ce, cet,* or *ceſt.*	Plur.		*Ces.*
	Gen. Abl.	*de ce, de cet,* or *ceſt.*			*de ces.*
	Dative,	*à ce, à cet, à ceſt.*			*à ces.*

Feminine.

		Conjunc.		Conjunc.	Abſol.
S.	N. Ac.	*Ceſte, cette.*	P.	*Ces, ceſtes,* or *cettes.*	
	G. Ab.	*de ceſte, de cette*		*de ces, de ceſtes, de cettes*	
	Dat.	*à ceſte,* or *à cette*		*à ces, à ceſtes, à cettes.*	

All the demonſtrative Pronounes are declined like this example, by application of the indefinite Articles *à* and *de* onely. Note,

Note, that *ce* is ſet afore words beginning with a conſonant, as *ce livre*, this book; and *cet* or *ceſt* afore words beginning with a vowell, or *h* mute, as *cet arbre*, this tree; *cet homme*, this man.

Alſo *ce*, when it is put alone without a ſubſtantive, or hath *qui* or *que* after it, is neutrall, ſignifying That, or It: *Ce ſeroit une belle trouſſe*, That would bee a faire cozening trick. *C'eſt bien dit*, it is well ſaid. *Ce que je di eſt vray*, that which I ſay is true. *Ce qui vous eſt mal-ſeant*, which thing is unſeemely for you. *Ce ne croy-je pas*, that I beleeve not. *Eſtant de ce fort joyeux*, being very joyfull of that. To theſe demonſtratives, for more expreſs demonſtration, are added the adverbiall particles *cy* heer and *là* there, the ſubſtantive demonſtrated ſet between thus: *Ce livre-cy*, this book. *Cette plume-là*, that pen. *Cet honneſte homme-cy*, this honeſt man heere. *Cette belle fille-là*, that faire mayden there. All other demonſtrative Pronounes are declined like the former example, by the indefinite Articles *de* and *à*. *Cetuy*, *celuy*, *celle*, *cette*, *ceux*, take alſo *cy* and *la* to them, as *Cetuy-cy*, this ſame; *cetuy-là*, that ſame: *cette-cy*, *cette-là*; *celuy-cy*, *celuy-là*; *celle-cy*, *celle-là*; *cettes-cy*, *cettes-là*; *ceux-cy*, *ceux-là*; *celles-cy*, *celles-là*; theſe ſame, thoſe ſame, or them ſame.

Relatives and Interrogatives.

Qui, *quoy*, *quel*, *quelle*, *icelluy*, *icelle*, are declined with the indefinite Articles *de* and *à*; as *Quel*, *de*

quel, à quel; *quels, de quels, à quels*, what or which. So *quoy, de quoy, à quoy*, neuter, what or which thing. Common gen.

Sing. { Nom. *Qui.* / G. Abl. *de qui.* / Dative *à qui.* / Accu. *que, qui* } Note, that *que* is the Accuſ. caſe of *qui* wch, the relative; but *qui* is the Accuſ. of *qui* who, the Interrog.

Lequel, the which, or who: maſculine.

Singul. { N. Ac. *lequel.* / G. Ab. *duquel.* / Dat. *auquel.* } Plur. { *leſquels.* / *deſquels.* / *auſquels* or *eſquels.* }

So *laquelle, de laquelle, à laquelle*: *leſquelles, deſquelles, auſquelles*, or *eſquelles*.

Mon, my, mine. Poſſeſſives.

	Conjunct. Maſc.	Fem.		Com.
Singul.	Nom. Acc. *Mon,*	*ma.*	Plur.	*Mes.*
	Gen. Abl. *de mon,*	*de ma.*		*de mes.*
	Dative, *à mon,*	*à ma.*		*à me.*

Abſolute.	Conjunc.	Abſol.	Conjunc.
Mien, le mien; un mien.	*de mien, du mien; d'un mien*	*Miens, les miens; des miens*	*de miens, des miens.*
	au mien; à un mien.		*à miens, aux miens,* or *es miens, à des miens.*

Nom. { *Miéne, la miéne*, Abſol. / Accu. *un miéne*, Conjun. }
Gen. { *de miéne, de la miéne*, Abſol. / Abla. *d'une miéne*, Conjunct. }
Dat. *à miéne, à la miéne; à une miéne.*
Plur. *Miénes, les miénes, des miénes; de miénes, des miénes;*

miénes; *à miénes*, *aux miénes*, and *es miénes*; *à des miénes*, mine. So *Ton*, *ta*, *tien*, thy, thine; and *ſon*, *ſa*, *ſien*, his or her, hers.

Note, that *Mon*, *ton*, *ſon*, being Maſculines, are yet ſet afore Nounes Feminines, beginning with a vowell or *h* mute; as *Mon ame*, my ſoule. *Son honneſte recompenſe*, his honeſt reward: and being joyned with theſe two words, *amie*, *amour*, doe ſometime ſuffer ſyncope; *m' amie*, *m' amour*, as before in the Apoſtrophus note is obſerved.

Noſtre, our. Conjunctive, abſolute.

Nomin. Accuſ.	Maſc.	*Noſtre*, *un noſtre*, *noſtre*, *le noſtre*.
	Fem.	*Noſtre*, *une noſtre*, *noſtre*, *la noſtre*.
Genit. Ablat.	Maſc.	*de noſtre*, *d' un noſtre*, *du noſtre*.
	Fem.	*de noſtre*, *d' une noſtre*, *de la noſtre*.
Dativ.	Maſc.	*à noſtre*, *à un noſtre*, *au noſtre*.
	Fem.	*à noſtre*, *à une noſtre*, *à la noſtre*.

	Conjunctive,	abſolute.
Plural. Common gender.	*Nos*,	*des noſtres*, *les noſtres*.
	de nos,	*des noſtres*.
	à nos;	*à des noſtres*, *aux noſtres*.

Thus alſo *voſtre*, your, yours; and *leur*, their, theirs. Common.

	Conjunctive,	abſolute.
Maſc.	*Leur*, *un leur*,	*le leur*.
Fem.	*leur*, *une leur*,	*la leur*.

Con-

	Conjunctive,	absolute.
Plur.	*leurs, des leurs,* &c.	*les leurs,*

Indefinites.

Quelque, quelques, ſome, of the Common Gender: *quelcun* or *quelqu'un, quelcune, quelques-uns, quelques-unes,* ſome, ſome one: *Aucun, aucune, aucuns, aucunes,* any, any one, ſome: *Chaque* common, and *chacun, chacune, chacuns, chacunes,* each, every: *Quiconque* whoſoever, *quelconque* whatſoever; *Nul, nulle, nuls, nulles,* none; *Autre* other, another; *Autruy,* anothers; *Celuy,* he; *Ceux,* they; are all declinable by means of the indefinite Articles *de* and *à* onely.

Meſme, ſame.	Conjunct.	absolute.
Sing. Nom Accuſ.	*Meſme,*	*le meſme.*
Genit. Ablat.	*de meſme,*	*du meſme.*
Dative,	*à meſme,*	*au meſme.*
Plur. *Meſmes,*	*les meſmes.*	Thus the Feminine *Meſme, la meſme.*
de meſmes,	*des meſmes.*	
à meſmes,	*aux meſmes.*	

Meſme is compounded with Pronouns, as the ſyllable *met* in Latine; but not with *je, tu, il, ils, me, te, ſe,* but many others; as *moy-meſme* my ſelf, *luy-meſme* himſelf, &c.

CHAP.

Chap. V.
Of a Verbe.

VErbs are of three ſorts; Actives, Paſſives and Neuters. The Actives form their Preterperfect Tenſe by *I' ay*; as *I' ay aimé*: the Paſſive by *Ie ſuis*; as *Ie ſuis aimé*: the Neuters are of two ſorts, Abſolute and Reciprocall. Abſolute, which form the Preterperfect Tenſe by *Ie ſuis*; as *Ie ſuis allé*: Reciprocall, which put *me, te, ſe, nous, vous* afore them; as *Ie me faſche*, I am angry: *il ſe mocque*, he mocketh. Of all which heerafter.

There are two auxiliare verbs (as you ſee) by whoſe help all verbs are conjugated; namely, *I' ay* and *Ie ſuis*: wherefore firſt of all, their conjugation muſt diligently bee learned by heart, thus:

Indicative Mood, Preſent Tenſe.

Sing.	*I' ay*, I have.	Pl.	*Nous avons*, we have
	Tu as, thou haſt.		*Vous avez*, yee have.
	Il a, he hath.		*Ils ont*, they have.
Sing.	*Ie ſuis*, I am.	Pl.	*Nous ſommes*, we are
	Tu es, thou art.		*Vous eſtes*, ye are.
	Il eſt, he is.		*Ils ſont*, they are.

The Preterimperfect Tenſe.

S	*I' avoy*, I had.	P.	*Nous avions*, we had
	Tu avois, thou hadſt		*Vous aviez*, ye had.
	Il avoit, he had.		*Ils avoyent*, they had.

I' eſtoy,

S. *I' eſtoy*, I was. *Tu eſtois*, thou waſt. *Il eſtoit*, he was.
P. *Nous eſtions*, we were *Vous eſtiez*, ye were. *Ils eſtoyent*, they were

The firſt Preterperfect, of time definite.

S. *I' eu*, I had. *Tu eus*, thou hadſt *Il eut*, he had.
P. *Nous euſmes*, we had. *Vous euſtes*, ye had. *Ils eurent*, they had.

S. *Ie fu*, I was. *Tu fus*, thou waſt. *Il fut*, he was.
P. *Nous fuſmes*, we were. *Vous fuſtes*, ye were. *Ils furent*, they were.

The ſecond Preterperfect Tenſe, compound and indefinite.

Singul. *I' ay eu*, I have had. *Tu as eu*, thou haſt had. *Il a eu*, he hath had.
Plural. *Nous avons eu*, we have had. *Vous avez eu* ye have had. *Ils ont eu*, they have had.

Singul. *I' ay eſté*, I have been. *Tu as eſté*, thou haſt been. *Il a eſté*, he hath been.
Plural. *Nous avons eſté*, we have been. *Vous avez eſté*, ye have been. *Ils ont eſté*, they have been.

The Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Singul. *I' avoy eu*, I had had. *Tu avois eu*, thou hadſt had. *Il avoit eu*, he had had.

Nous

Nous avions eu, we had had.
Plural. *Vous aviez eu*, ye had had.
Ils avoyent eu, they had had.

I' avoy eſté, I had been.
Singul. *Tu avois eſté*, thou hadſt been.
Il avoit eſté, he had been.

Nous avions eſté, we had been.
Plural. *Vous aviez eſté*, ye had been.
Ils avoyent eſté, they had been.

Future Tenſe.

I' auray, I ſhall have.
Singul. *Tu auras*, thou ſhalt have.
Il aura, he ſhall have.

Nous aurons, we ſhall have.
Plural. *Vous aurez*, ye ſhall have.
Ils auront, they ſhall have.

Ie ſeray, I ſhall be.
Singul. *Tu ſeras*, thou ſhalt be.
Il ſera, he ſhall be.

Nous ſerons, we ſhall be.
Plural. *Vous ſerez*, we ſhall be.
Ils ſeront, they ſhall be.

Some have two other Tenſes of *Ie ſuis: viz.*

1. Preterperfect redoubled, or Pluperfect definite. *I' eu eſté* I had been, *tu eus eſté, il eut eſté, Nous euſmes eſté, vous euſtes eſte, ils eurent eſté.*

2 Preterperfect indefinite redoubled, or Pluperfect indefinite. *I' ay eu eſté, tu as eu eſté, il a eu eſté, nous avons eu eſté, vous avez eu eſté, ils ont eu eſté.*

The

The Imperative Mood.

S { *Aye*, have thou. / *qu' il ait*, ot *aye*, let him have. } P { *Ayons*, let us have. / *Ayez*, have ye. / *qu' ils ayent*, let them have }

S { *Sois*, be thou. / *qu' il ſoit*, let him be. } P { *Soyons*, let us be. / *Soyez*, be ye. / *qu' ils ſoyent*, let them bee. }

Optative Mood, Preſent and Future Tenſe. *A la miéne volonté que*, or *Dieu veuille que*, God grant: but to the future is added *cy-apres*, heerafter.

S. { *I'aye*, I have, or may have / *Tu ayes*, thou have. / *Il ait*, *aye*, he have. } P. { *Nous ayons.* / *Vous ayez.* / *Ils ayent.* }

S. { *Ie ſoy*, I be, or may be. / *Tu ſois*, thou be. / *Il ſoit*, he be. } P. { *Nous ſoyons.* / *Vous ſoyez.* / *Ils ſoyent.* }

1. Preterimperfect. *Pleuſt à Dieu que*, would God.

I' euſſe, I had, or might have. / *Tu euſſes*, thou hadſt. / *Il euſt*, he had. } P. { *Nous euſſions.* / *Vous euſſiez.* / *Ils euſſent.* }

Ie fuſſe, I were, or might be. / *Tu fuſſes*, thou wert. / *Il fuſt*, or *fuſſe*, hee were. } P. { *Nous fuſſions.* / *Vous fuſſiez.* / *Ils fuſſent.* }

Second imperfect Tenſe. *Volontiers*, willingly.

I' auroy, I would have. / *Tu aurois*, thou wouldſt have. / *Il auroit*, he would have. } P. { *Nous aurions.* / *Vous auriez.* / *Ils auroyent.* }

S. *Ie ſeroy*, I ſhould be. *Tu ſerois*, thou ſhouldſt be *Il ſeroit*, he ſhould bee. P. *Nous ſerions. Vous ſeriez. Ils ſeroyent.*

Preterperfect Tenſe, *à la miéne volonte que*, or *Dieu veuille que*, I pray God.

S. *I' aye eu*, I have had. *Tu ayes eu*, thou haſt had *Il ait, aye eu*, he hath had. P. *Nous ayons eu. Vous ayez eu. Ils ayent eu.*

S. *I' aye eſté*, I have been. *Tu ayes eſté*, thou haſt been *Il ait, aye eſté*, he hath been. P. *Nous ayons eſté Vous ayez eſté. Ils ayent eſté.*

The firſt Pluperfect Tenſe. *Pleuſt à Dieu que*, would God.

S. *I' euſſe eu*, I had had. *Tu euſſes eu*, thou hadſt had *Il euſt, euſſe eu*, he had had. P. *Nous euſſions. Vous euſſiez. Ils euſſent.*

I' euſſe eſté, I had been. *Tu euſſes eſté*, thou hadſt been *Il euſt eſté*, he had been. P. *Nous euſſions eſté Vous euſſiez eſté. Ils euſſent eſté.*

The ſecond Pluperfect Tenſe. *Volontiers*, willingly.

Sing. *I' auroy eu*, I would have had. *Tu aurois eu*, thou wouldſt, &c. *Il auroit eu*, he would have had. P. *Nous auriõs eu Vous auriez eu Ils auroyent eu*

I' auroy eſté, I would have been *tu aurois eſté*, thou wouldſt, &c *Il auroit eſté*, he would, &c. *Nous aurions eſté. Vous auriez eſté. Ils auroyent eſté.*

The

The Subjunctive mood is wholly like to the Optative, saving in the future tense, which it hath peculiar.

Subjunctive, Future tense. *Quand*, when.

Sing.	Plur.
I'auray eu, I shall have had.	*Nous aurons eu.*
Tu auras eu, thou shalt have had.	*Vous aurez eu.*
Il aura eu, he shall have had.	*Ils auront eu.*

Sing.	Plur.
I'auray esté, I shall have beene.	*Nous aurons esté.*
tu auras este, thou shalt have bin	*Vous aurez esté.*
Il aura esté, he shall have been.	*Ils auront esté.*

The subjunctive formes are these, *Tantque, jusques à tantque, jusques à ce que*, appliable to all tenses: *Bienque, combienque, oreque, encoreque, ja-soitque, soitque, pourveuque, mais que, comme ainsi soitque, ainsque, ainsoisque, avantque, premierque*, to the present and first imperfect, perfect, and first pluperfect, and (not amisse) to the second pluperfect: *Comme ainsi fustque*, to the first imperfect, and pluperfect: *Lorsque, si, si tostque, si estce que*, goe well with the second imperfect, second pluperfect, and future, &c.

Infinitive mood, present, and preterimperfect tense, *Avoir*, to have. *Estre*, to be.

Preterperfect, and pluperfect tense, *Avoir eu*, to have had. *Avoir esté*, to have beene.

Par-

Participles. { Preſent, and imperfect, active, *Ayant* having: *Eſtant*, being. Preterperfect & pluperfect, active, *Ayant eu*, having had, *Ayãt eſté*, having bin Preterite, paſſive, or common, *Eu, euë*, had. *Eſté*, bin.

Participle of the future tenſe in Latine, *habiturus, futurus. I'eſpere que j'auray, que tu auras*, &c. *Que je doy avoir, que je ſuis pour avoir, que je vay avoir*, that I ſhall have; ought, am, goe, or am about to have; and *que je veux avoir*, that I will have. So *que je deroy avoir*, &c.

Supines, *Habitum ire, Aller avoir*, to go to have, *Habitu, D'eſtre eu, Avoir*, to be had.

Gerunds, *Habendi, D'avoir*, of having; *Habendo, En ayant*, in having; *Habendum, Pour avoir*, for to have; *habendum eſt, Il faut avoir*, one muſt have, &c. After theſe formes alſo, *Eſtre*; as *Qui ſera, qui doit eſtre, qui eſt pour eſtre, qui eſt à eſtre, qui eſt pres d'eſtre, qui va eſtre*, &c. So all other verbs.

Here are 2. things obſerveable: 1. Such verbs as end in *oy*, (except the names of verbes), having his dipthong, *Ie voy, je doy, je croy*, &c. have three varieties, *oy, oye*, & *ois*, as *I'avoy, I'avoye, j'avois*; *I'auroy, j'auroye, j'aurois*. All ſecond perſons plurall, doe end in *ez* long, as *vous avez, vous aurez*; Except definites, or firſt preterperfect tenſes, and theſe three, *vous eſtes, vous dites, vous faictes*, whoſe laſt ſyllable is ſhort.

Verbs actives tranſitives, are ſo called, becauſe the effect of the verb paſſeth from one ſubject being agent, into another, which is patient; ſo conteyning 2. perſons, one of the nominative caſe afore, the other of the accuſative or dative; as *I'aime les lettres*, I love learning; *La vertu me plaiſt*, vertue pleaſeth me.

Againe, verbs are either regular, of which one generall and infallible rule may be given; or irregular, which cannot be brought under one rule, but have each ſomething particular. But cuſtome hath prevailed, in imitation of the Latine, to diſtribute them into foure conjugations; about the order of which, the opinions of Authours are divers, ſome making the ſecond, that which others make the third, &c. But all agreeing on the firſt, it mattereth not greatly for the other.

The firſt conjugation then hath it infinitive in *er*, as *Aimer*; the ſecond in *ir*, as *Baſtir*; the third in *oir*, as *Voir*; and the fourth in *re*, as *Prendre*.

The conjugating of all verbes doth commonly depend on theſe five parts, from which all the other tenſes are deduced and formed: 1. The theame or firſt perſon ſingular of the preſent tenſe Indicative: 2. The firſt preterperfect tenſe, definite: 3. The infinitive: 4. The Participle active preſent: 5. The participle preterite paſſive, which I call alſo common.

For the deduction of the other parts from theſe,

theſe, obſerve well theſe rules: 1. The theame or firſt perſon Indicative is formed of the Infinitive, in the firſt, ſecond, and third conjugations by putting away *r*, as *Aimer*, *I'aime*; *fournir*, *Ie fourni*; *voir*, *Ie voy*; and in the fourth conjugation by putting away *re*, or the laſt ſyllable, as *Prendre*, *Ie prend*; *cognoiſtre*, *Ie cognoi*.

2. The firſt perſon plurall of the theame, is formed of the participle active preſent, by changing *ant* into *ons*, as *Aimãt*, *aimons*, *fournissãt*, *fournissons*, *voyant*, *voyons*. Or contrariwiſe, the ſaid participle of the ſaid firſt perſon plurall, by changing *ons* into *ant*, yet remembring this, that if there be a diphthong in the theame, it muſt bee in the third perſon plurall, though it be not in the participle, nor firſt and ſecond perſons plurall; as *Ie reçoy*, *nous recevons*, *ils reçoivent*.

3. The Imperfect tenſe Indicative, is formed of the ſaid firſt perſon plurall, or of the ſaid participle preſent, by changing *ons* or *ant* into *oi*, *oye*, or *ois*; as *Aimons* or *aimant*, *I'aimoy*. *Prenons* or *prenant*, *Ie prenoy*, &c.

4. The future tenſe, by adding *ay* to the Infinitive, after the laſt *r*, as *Aimer*, *I'aimeray*, *Prendre*, *Ie prendray*.

5. The ſecond perſon ſingular of the Imperative, is ever the Theame it ſelfe, rejecting the perſonall pronoune *Ie*; the third is formed of the third perſon plurall of the Theame, putting away

nt, and the plurall number is the ſame with the Indicative preſent, rejecting *Nous* and *vous*; as *Aime, qu'il aime, Aimons, aimez, qu'ils aiment. Reçoy, qu'il reçoive, Reçevons, reçevez, qu'ils reçoivent.* Except from this rule, the verbs *Faire* & *Sçavoir*.

6. The preſent and future tenſes optative, and ſubjunctive, are the ſame as the third ſingular of the Imperative, as *Que j'aime, beniſſe, reçoive, prene*: and in the firſt and ſecond perſons plurall, it taketh *i* afore the laſt ſyllable, as *Aimions, aimiez, Beniſſions, beniſſiez, Prenions, preniez*, &c.

7. The firſt imperfect of the Optative and Subiunctive, is formed of the ſecond perſon ſingular of the firſt preterperfect indicative, (called definite) by putting to *ſe*, as *Aimas, aimaſſe, baſtus, baſtiſſe.*

8. The ſecond imperfect of the Opt. and Subjunctive, is formed of the future Indicative, by changing *a* into *o*, or *ray* into *roy*, as *Aimeray, aimeroy, Benitray, beniroy.* Some irregulars excepted.

9. All the other tenſes are compounded of the auxiliare verbes, and of the participle preterite or common, as *I'ay parlé, I'avoy parlé*; *Ieuſſe parlé*, &c. *Ie ſuis parlé*, &c.

Thus from theſe five parts, all the reſt are deduced, as in theſe examples here following, appeareth.

In-

Indicative mood, preſent tenſe, ſingular.

1. I love, *I'aime, tu aimes, il aime.*
2. I build, *Ie baſti, tu baſtis, il baſtit.*
3. I ſee, *Ie voy, tu vois, il voit.*
4. I read, *Ie li*, or *lis, tu lis, il lit.*

Plur.
Nous aimons, vous aimez, ils aiment:
Nous baſtiſſons, vous baſtiſſez, ils baſtiſſent.
Nous voyons, vous voyez, ils voyent.
Nous liſons, vous liſez, ils liſent.

The preterimperfect tenſe.

I did loue, *I'aimoy, tu aimois, il aimoit.*
I did build, *Ie baſtiſſoy, tu baſtiſſois, il baſtiſſoit.*
I did ſee, *Ie voyoy, tu voyois, il voyoit.*
I did read, *Ie liſoy, tu liſois, il liſoit.*

Plur.
Nous aimions, vous aimiez, ils aimoyent.
baſtiſſions, baſtiſſiez, baſtiſſoyent.
voyions, voyiez, voyoyent.
liſions, liſiez, liſoyent.

The firſt preterperfect, of time definite.

Sing.
I loued, *I'aimay, tu aimas, il aima.*
I builded, *Ie baſti, tu baſtis, il baſtiſt.*
I ſaw, *Ie vei*, or *vi, tu veis* or *vis, il veiſt.*
I did read, *Ie leu, tu leus, il leut.*

Plur.
Nous aimaſmes, vous aimaſtes, ils aimerent.
baſtiſmes, baſtiſtes, baſtirent.
veiſmes, or *viſmes, veiſtes, virent.*
leuſmes, leuſtes, leurent.

The second preterperfect tense, compound, and unlimited.

Sing. I have { loved, builded, seene, read } *I ay, tu as, il, a* { *aimé. basti. veu. leu.*

Plur. *Nous avons, vous avez, ils ont* { *aimé. basti. veu. leu.*

The preterpluperfect tense.

Sing. I had { loved, builded, seene, read } *I'avoy, tu avois, il avoit.* { *aimé, basti. veu. leu.*

Plur. *Nous avions, vous aviez, il avoyent.* { *aimé. basti. veu. leu.*

The first redoubled definite: a tense proper to the French.

Sing. *I'eu, tu eus, il eut.*

Plur. *Nous eusmes, vous eustes, il eurent.* { *aimé. basti. veu. leu.* } I had { loved. built. seene. read.

The second redoubled indefinite, also proper to the French.

Sing. *I'ay eu, tu as eu, il a eu.* { *aimé, basti. veu, leu.*

Plur. { *Nous avons eu, vous avez eu, ils ont eu.* } { *Aimé. basti. veu. leu.* }

The Future tenſe ſingular.

S. { I ſhall or I will } { love, *I'aimeray, tu aimeras, il aimera.* / build, *baſtiray, baſtiras, baſtira.* / ſee, *voiray*, or *verray, verras, verra.* / read, *liray, liras, lira.* }

Plur. { *Nous aimerons, vous aimerez, ils aimeront.* / *baſtirons, baſtiréz, baſtiront.* / *verrons, verrez, verront.* / *lirons, liréz, liront.* }

Note that *verray, verras, verra*, &c. is moſt uſed, in ſtead of *voiray, voiras*, &c.

Imperative mood.

Sing. { love, build, ſee, read, } thou { *Aime. Baſti. Voy. Lis.* } | *qu'il* { *aime. baſtiſſe voye. liſe.* }

Plur. { *Aimons, aimez, qu'ils aiment.* / *Baſtiſſons, baſtiſſez, qu'ils baſtiſſent.* / *Voyons, voyez, qu'ils voyent.* / *Liſons, liſez, qu'ils liſent.* }

Optative mood, preſent and future tenſes: *A la miéne volonté que*, or *Dieu vueille que*, God grant. But to the future is added *Cy-apres*, hereafter.

Sing. that
I love, *I'aime, tu aimes, il aime.*
I build, *Ie baſtiſſe, tu baſtiſſes, il baſtiſſe.*
I ſee, *Ie voye, tu voyes, il voye.*
I read, *Ie liſe, tu liſes, il liſe.*

Plur.
Nous aimions, vous aimiez, ils aiment.
baſtiſſions, baſtiſſiez, baſtiſſent.
voyions voyiez, voyent.
liſions, liſiez, liſent.

The firſt Imperfect. *Pleuſt à Dieu que,* Would God.

Sing.
I loved, *I'aimaſſe, tu aimaſſes, il amaſt.*
I builded, *Ie baſtiſſe, baſtiſſes, baſtiſt.*
I ſaw, *Ie veiſſe, veiſſes, veiſt.*
I read *Ie leuſſes, leuſſes, leuſt.*

Plur.
Nous aimaſſions, vous aimaſſiez, ils aimaſſent
baſtiſſions, baſtiſſiez, baſtiſſent.
veiſſions, veiſſiez, veiſſent.
leuſſions, leuſſiez, leuſſent.

The ſecond imperfect. *Volontiers*, willingly.

Sing. I would.
love, *I'aimeroy, tu aimerois, il aimeroit.*
build, *Ie baſtiroy, tu baſtirois, il baſtiroit.*
ſee, *Ie verroy, tu verrois, il verroit.*
read, *Ie liroy, tu lirois, il liroit.*

Plur.
Nous aimerions, vous aimeriez, ils aimeroyent
baſtirions, baſtiriez, baſtiroyent.
verrions, verriez, verroyent.
lirions, liriez, liroyent.

The

The preterperfect tenſe, *a la miene volonté que*, or *Ie prie Dieu que*, I pray God

Sing. I have { loved, builded, ſeene, read, } *I'aye, tu ayes, il aye,* or *il an?* { *aimé. baſti. veu. leu.*

Plur. *Nous ayons, vous ayez, ils ayent.* { *aimé. baſti. veu. leu.*

The firſt Pluperfect tenſe, *Pleuſt à Dieu que*, would God

Sing. I had { loved, builded, ſeene, read. } *I'euſſe, tu euſſes, il euſt,* or *euſſe.* { *aimé. baſti. veu. leu.*

Plur. *Nous euſſions, vous euſſiez, ils euſſent.* { *aimé. baſti. veu. leu.*

The ſecond Pluperfect tenſe, *à la miene volonté que*, with a good will

Sing. I would have { loved, builded, ſeene, read, } *I'auroy, tu auroy, il auroit* { *aimé. baſti. veu. leu.*

Plur. *Nous aurions, vous auriez, ils auroyent.* { *aimé. baſti. veu. leu.*

The Subjunctive mood is in all points like to the Optative, saving that you must apply to it the subjunctive formes afore specified, and in the future tense, which it hath peculiar; thus:

Subjunctive future tense, *Quand*, when.

I shall have { loved, builded, seene, read. } *I'auray, tu auras, il aura.* { *aimé. basti. veu. leu.*

Plur. *Nous aurons, vous aurez, ils auront.* { *aimé. basti. veu. leu.*

Infinitive mood.

Present and imperfect tense. { *Aimer*, to love. *Bastir*, to build. *Voir*, to see. *Lire*, to reade.

Preterperfect, and preterpluperfect tenses. { *Avoir aimé*, to have or had loved. *Avoir basti*, to have or had built. *Avoir veu*, to have or had seene. *Avoir leu*, to have or had read.

Participles. { Present & imperfect, active, *Aimant*, loving, *bastissant*, building, *voyãt*, seeing, *lisant*, reading. Preterperf. & preterpluper, passive, *ayant aimé*, having loved, *ayant basti*, *ayant veu*, *ayant leu*. Preterite passive, or common, *aimé*, *aimée*, loved, *basti*, *bastie*, *veu*, *veuë*, *leu*, *leuë*. *Amaturus*, *qui aimera*, which shall love; *qui doit aimer*,

aimer, qui eſt pour aimer, qui va aimer, which is ready or about to love; *pres d'aimer*, neere loving; *voulant* or *allant aimer*, about to love. Supines, *Aimer, à aimer*. Gerunds, *d' aimer*, of loving, *en aimant*, in loving, *pour aimer*, for to love, *il faut aimer*, one muſt love: *amandus*, to be loved, *à aimer, qui doit eſtre aimé*, or *aimée*.

Verbes reciprocall, or reflexed, are all ſuch as make not their tranſitive action from one ſubject into another, but the agent reciprocates its action into it ſelfe, becomming both agent and patient; for it hath both the nominative, and alſo the dative or accuſative, of one ſame perſon; whence they often inferre a paſſive ſenſe, as *Ie me delecte à l'eſtude*, I delight my ſelfe, or I am delighted with ſtudy, *Tu te plais à jouer*, thou pleaſeſt thy ſelfe in play, *Ton pere ſ'en faſche*, thy father is angry at it, &c. They are thus conjugated:

Indicative mood, preſent tenſe.

Ie m'aime, I love my ſelfe, *tu t'aimes, il ſ'aime, nous nous aimons, vous vous aimez, ils ſ'aiment.*

Ie me faſche, I am angry, *tu te faſches, il ſe faſche, nous nous faſchons, vous vous faſchez, ils ſe faſchent.*

Ie me mocque, I mocke, *tu te mocques, il ſe mocque, nous nous mocquons, vous vous mocquez, ils ſe mocquẽt.*

Imperfect tenſe.

Ie m'aimoy, I did love my ſelfe, *tu t'aimois, il ſ'aimoit, nous nous aimions, vous vous aimiez, ils ſ'aimoyent.*

Ie

Ie me faſchoy, I was angry, *tu te faſchois*, *il ſe faſchoit*, *Nous nous faſchions*, *vous vous faſchiez*, *ils ſe faſchoyent*.

Ie me mocquoy, I did mocke, *tu te mocquois*, *il ſe mocquoit*, *Nous nous mocquions*, *vous vous mocquiez*, *ils ſe mocquoyent*.

2. Preterperfect definite.

Ie m'aimay, I loved my ſelfe, *ie me faſchay*, I was angry, *ie me mocquay*, I mocked, *tu t'aimas*, &c.

2. Preterperfect, indefinite.

Ie me ſuis aimé, I have loved my ſelfe,
Ie me ſuis faſché, I have beene angry,
Ie me ſuis mocqué, I have mocked.

tu t'es, *il ſ'eſt*.

Nous nous ſommes, *vous vous eſtez*, *ils ſe ſont*.

aimé, *aimez*, *faſché*, *faſchez*, *mocqué*, *mocquez*.

Preterpluperfect tenſe.

Ie m'eſtois aimé, I had loved my ſelf,
Ie m'eſtois faſché, I had beene angry,
Ie m'eſtois mocqué, I had mocked.

tu t'eſtois, *il ſ'eſtoit*.

aimé, &c.

Nous nous eſtions, *vous vous eſtiez*, *ils ſ'eſtoyent*.

aimé, *aimez*, *faſché*, *faſchez*, *mocqué*, *mocquez*.

The

The redoubled definite, much used.

Ie me fu aimé, I had loved my selfe, *tu te fus aimé, il se fut aimé, nous nous fusmes aimez, vous vous fustes aimez, ils se furent aimez*: so *Ie me fu faschè*, I had beene angry.

Future tense.

Ie m'aimeray, I will love my selfe, *tu t'aimeras*, thou wilt love thy selfe, &c. and *Ie me fascheray*, I will bee angry; and *je mocqueray*, I will mocke, &c.

Imperative, *Aime-toy, qu'il s'aime, aimons-nous, aimez-vous, qu'ils s'aiment.*

Optative present, and future, *à la miene volonté que je m'aime, que tu t'aimes*, &c.

1. Imperfect, *Pleust à Dieu que je m'aimasse, que tu t'aimasses, qu'il s'aimast*, or *aimasse*, &c.

2. Imperfect, *Volontiers je m'aimerois, tu t'aimerois*, &c.

Preterperfect tense, *à la miene volonté, que je me sois aimé, tu te sois aimé, il se soit aimé, nous nous soyons aimez, vous vous soyez aimez, ils se soyent aimez.*

1. Preteipluperfect, *Pleust à Dieu que, Ie me fusse aimé, tu te fusses aimé*, &c.

2. Pluperfect, *volontiers Ie me serois aimé, tu te serois aimé*, &c.

Subjunctive, future, *Quand je me seray aimé, tu te seras aimé*, &c.

Infinitive pres. and imperf. *M'aimer, t'aimer, s'aimer, nous aimer, vous aimer, s'aimer.*

Per-

Perfect and Pluperfect, *M' estre aimé, t' estre aimé, ſ' estre aimé*, &c.

Participle preſent and imperf. *M' aimant, t' aimant, ſ' aimant*, &c.

Preterperfect and Pluperfect, *M' eſtant aimé, t' eſtant aimé*, &c.

Heer two things are to be noted; Firſt, that in the compound Tenſes, the auxiliar *Ie ſuis* is uſed in ſtead of *I' ay*. Secondly, that the Participle common follows ever the Gender and Number of the Subſtantive that is the patient; as, *Ceſte femme ſ' eſt fardee*, this woman is painted, or hath painted herſelfe; *& ſes amoureux ſ' y ſont abuſez*, and her lovers have been deceived by it, or have deceived themſelves by it.

All Verbs active may thus bee reciprocated. But there are ſome Verbs which move alone according to this forme; as, *Ie me ſouvien*, I remember: *Ie me repen*, I repent: *Ie m' abſtien*, I abſtaine: *Ie me comporte*, I behave my ſelfe: *Ie m' esbahi*, I wonder: *Ie m' eſmerveille*, I marvell: *Ie me mocque*, &c. which three laſt may alſo be uſed in the ſenſe and conjugation paſſive; as, *Ie ſuis esbahi*, I am abaſhed or aſtonied: *Ie ſuis eſmerveillé*, I wonder: *Ie ſuis mocqué*, I am mocked.

Verbs neuters are ſuch as conteine in themſelves an effect which is not produced in any other ſubject. Some of theſe do, firſt, appropriate to themſelves the active forme; as, *Ie dors*, I ſleep, whoſe

whose Preterperfect is *I' ay dormi*, *Ie vi*, I live, *I' ay veſcu*: ſo *Ie ſuë*, *Ie tremble*, *Ie friſſonne*, *Ie gèle*, and ſome others, which we referre to the diſpoſition active. Secondly, others there are which have a double uſe and ſenſe: which imployed actively have the active conjugation, but in the neuter ſenſe have the neuter; as, *Ie croiſ*, I growe: which, ſignifying actively I give growth to ſome thing, hath its Preterperfect *I' ay cru*; but ſignifying, I growe in my ſelfe, hath its Preterperfect *Ie ſuis cru*. So *I' adonci* hath *I' ay adonci* and *Ie ſuis adonci*: and of theſe we will give a long liſt anon. Thirdly, there are others which have onely the diſpoſition neuter, and none other; as, *Naiſtre*, *mourir*, *aller*, *choir*, *tomber*, *venir*, *retourner*, *iſſir*, &c. which have their effect in a locall moving: yet ſome of theſe may have alſo an active tranſitive ſenſe, and active conjugation: *Nous avons toute la matinee couru le lievre*, we have all the morning runne (or hunted) the Hare: heer *courir* is active. *Si toſt que nous avons oüi l' alarme, nous y ſommes courus*; ſo ſoone as wee heard the alarum, wee ranne thither: heere *courir* is neuter. And of this ſort are theſe; *Arriver*, *aborder*, *deſcendre*, *entrer*, *evader*, *eſchaper*, *eſcamper*, *fuir*, *monter*, *paſſer*, *ſortir*, *partir* to depart, and perhaps ſome others: which when they have an accuſative caſe after them, are actives; if without any after them, are neuters, becauſe their effect finiſheth in themſelves. For conjugating

jugating of theſe, ſee the Verb *Aller*, hereafter. Now of the ſecond ſort are Verbs, which according to the diverſe conjugating and ſyntax applied to them, may bee Actives tranſitives, Reciprocals and Neuters; namely, *Aborder, abaiſſer, abouttir, abreger, accourcir, adoucir, affoiblir, afermir, afadir, agrandir, agreſtir, aigrir, alentir, alonger, aleger, ajeunir, amuigrir, amender, amenuiſer, amollir, amoindrir, anéantir, anonchalir, amoitir, apetiſſer, apauvrir, apeſantir, aprivoiſer, ardre* or *ardoir, arondir, aſprir, atiedir, atendrir, aſſagir, augmenter, avachir, aſſecher. Baiſſer, bãder, blãchir, bouger, branler, bruſler, bruner, blõdir. Chãger, chãrger, croiſtre, chãzir, crouler. Diminuer, dégeler, dãloger, décliner, dévoler, durcir. embellir, enlaidir, encherir, encliner, endurcir, enorgueillir, enforcer, engourdir, engroſsir, enhardir, engraiſſer, emmaigrir, enrichir, envenimer, empirer, envieiller, eſclairer, eſclaircir, eſpaiſſir, eſlargir, eſtrecir, eſloigner, eſvanoüir. Fener, fanir* or *faner, fleſtrir, fléchir, finir. greſlir* or *graiſler, groſſir, griller, grouler, guerir, hauſſer, jaunir, laſcher, loger, Meurir, moitir, moiſir, mollir, multiplier, monter, mouvoir, mauver, muër, Noircir, nicher, Piler, plomber, pourrir, profiter, pancher, Rabaiſſer, ravaler, rancir, reboucher, remuër, renchérir, renforcer, réſtrecir, reverdir, rajeunir, roidir, rother, rongir, rouſſir, reculer, Saigner, ſonner, ſeicher, Trainer, tremper, tarir, Verdir, vieillir, venter.* Example: *Le ſoleil mollit la cire, et durcit la fange*; the Sunne ſoftneth wax, and hardneth dirt. *La cire mollit*, or *ſ'amollit au ſoleil*; *et la fange y durcit*, or *ſ'y en-*

ſ'y endurcit: wax ſofteneth, or is ſoftned at the Sunne; and dirt thereby hardneth, or is thereby hardned. *La roſée blanchit la toille:* the dew whiteneth cloth. *La toille blanchit*, or *ſe blanchit par la roſée:* cloth whiteneth, or is whitened by the dew, &c.

Verbs Paſſives are conjugated throughout, by meanes of the auxiliare Verb *Ie ſuis*, and the Participle paſſive: as Indicative preſent Tenſe, *Ie ſuis aimé*, I am loved; *Tu es aimé*, thou art loved; *Il eſt aimé*, he is loved, &c. Imperfect; *I'eſtoy aimé*, I was loved, and ſo forwards: *Ie fu aimé, I'ay eſté aimé, I'avoy eſté aimé, Ie ſeray aimé*, &c. and in all other Moods & Tenſes uſing the auxiliar *Ie ſuis*, and the aforeſaid Participle: which Participle varieth in Gender & Number; as, *Ie ſuis aimé*, maſculine; *aimée*, feminine: Plurall, *Nous ſommes aimez*, maſc. *aimées*, fem.

Chap. VI.

Of Verbes Anomala *or* Irregular.

THus have we run over the kindes of verbes, and ſhewed the conjugating of the regulars. now we come to the heteroclites and irregulars. But firſt note, that the verbs of the firſt conjugation, which are almoſt infinite in number, are all regular, ſaving that in ſome phraſes we ſay *gard'* in ſtead of *garde*; as, *Dieu gard' la compagnie*, God

ſave the company, *Dieu vous gard' de mal*, God keepe you from evill; Alſo we ſay, *Doint* for *donne*, as *Dieu vous doint heureuſe & longue vie*, God give you an happy and long life; and in the future Indicative we ſay, *donray*, for *donneray*; and in the ſecond imperfect optative, *donroy*, for *donneroy*: So alſo in the verbe *Laiſſer*, we ſay *Lairray*, *lairrois*, in the ſame tenſes, for *Laiſſeray*, *laiſſerois*; and ſometimes (though ſeldome) *amerray*, *amerrois*, for *ameneray*, *amenerois*. Laſtly, except the verbe *Aller*, to goe, a verbe neuter, Heteroclite, and irregular: Yet, for it frequent uſe, worth your learning throughout.

Indicative mood, preſent tenſe. I goe.

Ie vay, vais, or *vois, tu vas, il va: Nous allons, vous allez, ils vont.*

Imperfect, I did goe, *I'alloy, tu allois, il alloit: nous allions, vous allioz, ils alloyent.*

1. Perfect definite, I went, *I'allay, tu allas, il alla: nous allaſmes, vous allaſtes, ils allérent.*

2. Preterperfect tenſe indefinite,

I have gone.

Ie ſuis allé, tu es allé, il eſt allé; nous ſommes allez, vous eſtez allez, ils ſont allez.

Preterpluperfect tenſe, I had gone.

I'eſtoy allé, tu eſtois allé, il eſtoit allé; nous eſtions allez, vous eſtiez allez, ils eſtoyent allez.

The redoubled definite, much uſed,

I had gone.

Ie fu allé, tu fus allé, il fut allé; nous fuſmes allez, vous fuſtes allez, ils furent allez.

The redoubled indefinite. I had gone.

I'ay eſté allé tu as eſté allé, il a eſté allé; nous avons eſté allez, vous avez eſté allez, ils ont eſté allez.

Future, I will goe; *I'iray, tu iras, il ira; nous irons, vous irez, ils iront.*

Imperative, goe thou, *va, qu'il aille*; or *voiſe*; *Allons, allez, qu'ils aillent*, or *voiſent.*

Optative mood, preſent and future, *Dieu vueille-que*, God grant I may goe, *I'aille*, or *voiſſe*, *tu ailles* or *voiſſes*, *il aille*, or *voiſe*: *nous allions*, or *voiſions*, *vous alliez*, or *voiſiez*, *ils aillent*, or *voiſent.*

1. Imperfect. *Pleuſt à Dieu que.* Would God I did go; or, I went.

I'allaſſe, tu allaſſes, il allaſt, or *allaſſe*; *nous allaſſions*, or *alliſſions*, *vous allaſſiez*, or *alliſſiez*, *ils allaſſent.*

2. Imperfect. *Volontiers*, I willingly would goe, *I'iroy, tu irois, il iroit: nous irions, vous iriez, ils iroyent.*

Preterperfect. *Ie prie Dieu que*, I pray God I have gone.

Ie ſoye allé, tu ſois allé, il ſoit allé, Nous ſoyons allez, vous ſoyez allez, ils ſoyent allez.

1. Preterpluperfect. *Pleuſt a Dieu que*, Would God I had gone.

Ie fuſſe allé, tu fuſſes allé, il fuſt, or *fuſſe allé*; *Nous fuſſions allez, vous fuſſiez allez, ils fuſſent allez.*

2. Pluperfect. *Volontiers*, willingly I had gone, or would have gone.

Ie ſeroy allé, tu ſerois allé, il ſeroit allé, Nous ſerions allez, vous ſeriez allez, ils ſeroyent allez.

The Subjunctive is as the Optative, except this future, *Quand*, When I ſhall goe, or be gone.

Ie ſeray allé, tu ſeras allé, il ſera allé, Nous ſerons allez, vous ſerez allez, ils ſeront allez.

Infinitive, *Aller*, to goe, *Eſtre allé*, to be, or to have or had gone.

Participles, *Allant*, going, *Eſtant allé*, being or having gone, *Allé, allez, allee, allees.* gone.

The Heteroclites, and Anomala'es of the other three conjugations now follow; of which wee will onely ſet downe the five maine parts, afore mentioned, from which all the other may bee deduced.

Of the ſecond conjugation.

Note firſt, that all adverbs of the three conjugations following, make the third perſon ſingular of the preſent Indicative, and of the firſt preterperfect, in *t* or *d*, as *il guerit*, *il void* or *voit*, *il prend*.

2. That the ſecond perſon, in thoſe ſame tenſes, is uſurped often for the firſt: ſo that wee may ſay, *Ie gueri*, or *Ie gueris*, *Ie voy*, or *Ie vois*, *Ie pren*, or *Ie prens*. Yet from this rule is excepted theſe verbs, *I'ouvre*, *Ie couvre*, *I'offre*, *Ie ſouffre*, and their compounds

pounds: also *Ie cueille*,

I assaile, *I'assauls, tu assauls, il assault, Nous assaillons*, &c. Definite, *I'assailli*. Indefinit, *I'assailli*; Infinitive, *Assaillir*. Participle, *Assaillant*. Future, *I'assailliray*, or *I'assaudray*.

So *Tressaillir*, and *Sursailler*. The simple verbe *Sailler*, to leape, wants the singular of the present Indicative; and (consequently) the second person singular of the Imperative: the rest is whole.

I bleſſe, *Ie beni*, and the third person plurall *beniſſent* or *benient*. *Ie beni* or *benis*. *I'ay benit*. *Benir*, and in old time, *benire* or *benistre*.

I boile, *Ie bouls*, plur. *Nous boüillons*: *Ie boüilli*, *I'ay boüilli*, or *boüillu*; *Boüillir*. *Boüillant*. Future, *Ie boüilliray*, or *boudray*. Thus *Esboüillir*, *Reboüillir*.

¶ I make a noiſe, *Ie brui*. *Ie bruï*, *I'ay bruit*. *Bruir*, or *bruire*. *Bruyant*.

¶ I runne, *Ie cour*, *Ie couru*, *I'ay couru*, or *Ie ſuis couru*, or *Ie m'en ſuis couru*. *Courir*, or *courre*, with ſome. *Courant*. Future, *Ie courray*. So *Accourir*, *Recourir*, *Encourir*; also *ſecourir* and *diſcourir*, ſaving that they have not the neuter conjugating.

¶ I cover, *Ie couvre*, *Ie couvri*, *I'ay couvert*, *Couvrir*, *Couvrant*. So it compounds *deſcouvrir*, *recouvrir*; also *ouvrir*, *offrir*, and *ſoufrir*.

¶ *Ie cueuls*, *tu cueuls*, *il cueult*, or which is more uſed, *Ie cueille*, *tu cueilles*, *il cueille*, *nous cueillons*.

Ie cueilli, *I'ay cueilli*, *Cueiller*, *Cueillant*. Future, *Ie cueilliray*, or *cueilleray*; *cueudray*, out of uſe.

¶ I circumciſe, *Ie circonci*, or *cis*; *Ie circonci*, or *cis*; *I'ay circoncis*, *Circoncir*, or *Circoncire*; *Circonſiſant*, or *Circonciant*.

¶ I ſleepe, *Ie dors*, *tu dors*, *il dort*; *nous dormons*: *Ie dormi*, *I'ay dormi*, *Dormir*, *Dormant*.

¶ I ſquare, *I'eſquarre*, *I'eſquarri*, *I'ay eſquarre*: *eſquarrir*, *eſquarrant*.

¶ I faile, *Ie faus*, *tu faus*, *il faut*, *nous faillons*: *Ie failli*, *I'ay failli*, *faillir*, *faillant*, *Ie failliray*, or *faudray*.

Thus *Defaillir*.

¶ I ſtrike, *Ie fiér*, *Ie feri*, or *feru*, *I'ay feru*, *Ferir*, *fiérant*.

¶ I flee, *Ie fuï*, *Ie fuï*, *I'ay fuï*, *Ie ſuis fuï*, or *Ie m'en ſuis fuï*, or *fuit*: *fuïr*, or *fuire*; *fuyant*. So *Enfuïr*, and *Refuïr*; alſo *Defuïr*, ſaving that it is onely actively not paſſively.

¶ I lye downe, or in child-bed, *Ie gis*, *Ie geſi*, *I'ay geſi*, *Geſir*, *giſant*: Future, *Geſiray*, or *giray*, or *gerray*, of the old infinitive *Gerre*.

¶ I have, *Ie hay*, *Ie haï*, *I'ay haï*, *Haïr*, *Hayant*, or *haïſſant*: Future, *Hairay*, or *haïray*.

I iſſue forth, *I'iſſi*, or *I'is*. *I'iſſi*, *Ie ſuis iſſu*, *Iſſir*, Fut. *Iſſiray*.

I die, *Ie meurs*, *tu meurs*, *il meurt*, *Nous mourons*, *Ie mouru*, *Ie ſuis mort*, *Mourir*, *mourant*: Future, *Ie mourray*. Reciprocated, *Ie me meurs*, *tu te meurs*, &c.

¶ I lie, *Ie mens*, *Ie menti*, *I'ay menti*, *Mentir*, *Mentant*. So *Démentir*.

¶ I

¶ I heare, *I'oy, I'ouï, I'ay ouï, Ouir, Oyant*: Future *Orray*, or *oiray*. So *entrouir*.

¶ I depart, *Ie parts, Ie parti, I'ay parti*, or *Ie ſuis parti*; *Partir, Partant*. So *Repartir, Departir, Compartir* and *Mipartir*.

¶ I think, *Ie pu, tu pus, il put, Nous puons; Ie puï, I'ay puï. Puïr, Putant*, or *puant*; Fut. *puray*.

¶ I ſeeke, or fetch, *Ie quier, Ie quis, I'ay quis, Qucrir* or *querre, querant*; Future, *Querray*. So *Acquerir, conquerir, enquerir, requerir*.

¶ I ſeele, *Ie ſen, Ie ſenti, I'ay ſenti, Sentir, ſentant*. So *conſentir, diſſentir, reſſentir*.

¶ I ſerve, *Ie ſers, Ie ſervi, I'ay ſervi, Servir, ſervant*. So *Reſervir*, and *deſſervir*.

¶ I repent, *Ie me repen, Ie me repenti, Ie me ſuis repenti, Se repentir, Se repentant*.

¶ I go forth, *Ie ſors, Ie ſorti, I'ay ſorti*, or *Ie ſuis ſorti, Sortir, ſortant*.

¶ I hold, *Ie tien, tu tiens, il tient, Nous tenons, vous tenez, ils tiennent*; *Ie tins*, and the third plurall, *ils tendrent*; *I'ay tenu*, or of ſome *tins*: *Tenir, Tenant*, Fut. *Ie tiendray*. So *Appartenir, contenir, detenir, entretenir, maintenir, obtenir, retenir, ſouſtenir*.

¶ I take away, *Ie tolli, Ie talli*, or *tollu, I'ay tolli*, or *tollu, Tollir, tolliſſant*.

¶ I come, *Ie vien, Ie vins, Ie ſuis venu, Venir, Venant*, Fut. *Ie viendray*, and the third perſon plurall of the firſt perfect tenſe definite, *Vindrent*, as afore in *Ie tien*. So *Avenir, devenir, revenir, provenir,*

parvenir, ſurvenir, intervenir, &c. But *prevenir* and *ſubvenir*, have the active and paſſive forme; and *Convenir*, the active or neuter indifferently.

¶ I clothe, or put on, *Ie veſts*, or *veſtis*, *Ie veſti*, *I'ay veſtu*, *veſtir*, *veſtant*, or *veſtiſſant*. So *Deueſtir*, *reveſtir*, &c.

Of the third Conjugation.

¶ I appeare, *I'apper*, or *I'apparoy*, *I'apparu*, or *paru*. *Apparoir*, or *apparoiſtre*.

¶ I perceive, *I'apperçoy*, *ois*, *oit*, *nous appercevons*, *ez*, *ils apperçoivent*. *I'apperceu*, *I'ay apperceu*, *Appercevoir*, *Appercevant*. Fut. *Appercevray*. So *Concevoir*, *Decevoir*, *Recevoir*, *Devoir*, and *ramentevoir*; whoſe preſents indicative are, *Ie conçoy*, *Ie deçoy*, *Ie reçoy*, *Ie doy*, *Ie ramentoy*.

Avoir is already before conjugated.

¶ I fall, *Ie che*, *tu chés il chet*, *Nous chéons*: *Ie cheu*, *I'ay cheu*, or *Ie ſuis cheu*, *Cheoir*, *cheant*. Fut. *Ie cherray*. So *Decheoir*, *Eſcheoir*, and *Recheoir*.

¶ *Chaloir*, and *Faloir*, are meerely impersonalls; of which hereafter.

¶ I grieve, *Ie deuls*, *Ie doulu*, *I'ay doulu*, *Douloir*, *Deulant*, or *dueillant*, *Dueilleray*.

It is moſt uſed reciprocally, thus: *Ie me deul*, *tu te deuls*, *il ſe deult*. *Nous nous dueillons*, or *doulons*, *vous vous dueillez*, *ils ſe dueillent*, or *deulent*. *Ie me dueilli*, or *doulu*. *Ie me ſuis doulu*. *Se douloir*. *Se dueillant*, or *doulant*. *Ie me deurray*. So *Condouloir*.

¶ I move, *Ie meus*, *eus*, *eut*. *Nous mouvons*, *ez*, *ils meuvent*,

meuvent, or *mouvent*. *Ie meu*. *I' ay meu*. *Mouvoir*, or *meuvoir*. *Mouvant*. Fut. *Ie meurray*. *Mouveray*, or *meuvray*. So *Esmouvoir*, *demouvoir*, &c.

¶ I raine, *Ie pleu*. *Ie plu*. *I' ay plu*. *Pleuvoir*. *Pleuvant*. *Pleuvray*. It is used impersonally: *Il pleut*, *il plut*. *Il a plu*, &c.

¶ I can, *Ie puis*, or *Ie peux*, *tu peux*, *il peut*: *nous pouvons*, *ez*, *peuvent*. *Ie peu*. *I' ay peu*. *Pouvoir*, *pouvant*. Fut. *Ie pourray*. Present Opt. *Ie puisse*.

¶ I knowe, *Ie sçay*, *tu sçais*, *il sçait*. *Nous sçavons*, *vez*, *vent*. *Ie sceu*. *I' ay sceu*. *Sçavoir*. *Sçachant*. Imperative, *Sçache*, *qu' il sçache*, *sçachons*, &c.

¶ I sit, *Ie sieds*, or *sié'd*, *tu sièds*, *il sied*. *Nous séons*, *ez*, *ils séent*. *Ie sis*. *I' ay sis*. *Seoir*, or *soir*. *Séant*, or *siésant*. Fut. *Ie sieray*, or *serray*, or *sieseray*. Thus *Sursoir*, *Assoir*, and *Rassoir*. These verbs, and *Assoir*, *rassoir*, are often used as Reciprocals. Also this is much used impersonally. *Il sied*, *il seoit*, or *sieseoit*. The Preterperfect are not used, but supplied by the Participle. *Il fut seant*, *il a esté seant*. *Il siera*. Infinitive, *Estre seant*. Thus it signifieth to sit well, or become.

¶ *Souloir* is a verb defective: in the plurall of the present indicative, it hath *Nous soulons*. Imperfect, *Ie soulois*, *ois*, *oit*: *nous soulions*, *iez*, *ils souloyent*. Infinitive, *souloir*, to be wont. All the rest is wanting, and supplied by the Verb *Accoustumer*; as, *Ie suis accoustumé*, &c.

¶ I am worth, or of value, *Ie vau*, or *vaux*, *tu*

vaux,

vaux, il vaut: nous vallons, ez, ils vaillent, or *valent. Ie valu. I' ay valu. Valoir. Valant. Ie vaudray.* Imperative, *vaux, qu' il vale* or *vaille, valons, valez, qu' ils valent* or *vaillent.*

¶ I will, *Ie vueil,* or more in uſe, *Ie veux, tu veux, il veut: nous voulons, ez, ils veulent, Ie voulu, I' ay voulu, vouloir, voulant, Ie voudray.* Imperative (of little uſe) *veux, qu' il veule* or *vueille: voulons, ez, qu' ils veulent,* or *vueillent.* Preſent Optative, *Ie veule* or *vueille,* or *veuille.* The firſt imperfect Optative, *Ie vouluſſe,* or *vouſiſſe.*

Of the fourth Conjugation.

¶ I burne, *I' ards, I' ardi, I' ay ars: Ardre,* or *ardoir. Ardant. I' ardray.* So *Eſpardre.*

¶ I wait, *I' atten. I' attende. I' ay attendu. Attendre. Attendant. I' attendray.* So alſo *Tendre, deſtendre, eſtendre, entendre, pretendre;* alſo *Fendre, defendre, pourfendre;* and *Pendre, deſpendre, reſpandre, rependre, ſuſpendre, eſpandre, vendre, deſcendre, condeſcendre, rendre.* But *deſcendre* hath it Preterperfect *I' ay,* or *Ie ſuis deſcendu.*

¶ I beat, *Ie bas, tu bas, il bat: nous batons. Ie bati. I' ay batu. Battre, battant. Ie battray.* ſo it compoũds.

¶ I drinke; *Ie boy, ois, oit, Nous beuvons, ez, ils boivent,* or *beuvent, Ie beu, I' ay beu, Boire, Beuvant. Ie boiray,* or *beuray.*

¶ I bray, *Ie bray, Ie brahi, I' ay brait, Braire, brayant.*

¶ *Brui,* is before in the ſecond.

¶ I

¶ I gird, *Ie ceins, tu ceins, il ceint, Nous ceignons: Ie ceigni, I'ay ceinct, Ceindre, Ceignant.*

In like manner, *Craindre, Aſtreindre, eſtreindre, contraindre, feindre, teindre, peindre, reſtreindre, oindre, joindre, enfraindre,* and all in *aindre, eindre,* and *oindre,* ſaving theſe three, *Aveindre, Teindre,* and *eſteindre,* which are thus conjugated.

¶ I colour, or dye, *Ie Tein. je teigni,* or *teindi, I'ay teint, Teindre, Teignant,* or *teindant:* ſo the others.

¶ I ſhut, *Ie clos, je cloſi, j'ay clos, Clorre, cloſant.* So *Enclorre, forclorre, eſclorre, renclorre.*

¶ I conclude, *Ie conclu,* or *clus: nous concluons, je conclus, j'ay conclus, Conclurre, Concluant. Ie conclurray.* So *exclurre, reclurre,* and *forclurre.*

¶ I confect, *Ie confi, je confis, j'ay confit, confire,* or *confir, confiſant.* So *déconfire.*

¶ I ſew, *Ie couds: nous couſons, je couſi,* or *couſu, j'ay couſu, Coudre, couſant.* So *découdre, recoudre.*

¶ I beleeve, *Ie croy, je creu, I'ay creu, Croire, croyant.* So *Meſcroire, deſcroire; Accroire* hath but the infin.

¶ I grow, *Ie croy,* or *crois: nous croiſſons, je creu, j'ay creu,* or *je ſuis creu. Croiſtre, croiſſant, je croiſtray.* So *Accroiſtre, deſcroiſtre, parcroiſtre, ſurcroiſtre.*

¶ I ſeethe, *Ie cuis, nous cuiſons, je cuiſi, j'ay cuit, cuire, cuiſant.* So *Decuire, recuire;* alſo *duire, conduire, deduire, induire. produire, reduire, introduire, eſconduire, ſeduire, traduire:* alſo *Conſtruire, deſtruire, inſtruire.*

¶ I ſay, *Ie dy, tu dis, il dit: Nous diſons, vous dites, ils*

ils diſent, or *dient*, *je dis*, *j'ay dit*, *Dire*, *diſant*.

Imperative, *Di*, *qu'il diſe* or *die*, *Diſons*, *dites*, *qu'ils diſent* or *dient*. Preſent optative, *que ie diſe* or *die*, *tu diſes* or *dies*, *il diſe* or *die*, *diſions*, *diſiez*, *diſent* or *dient*. So *contredire*, *deſdire*, *maudire*, *meſdire*, *predire*, *redire*; ſaving that *maudire* hath it participle *maudiſſant*.

¶ I write, *Ie eſcri: nous eſcrivons*. *j'eſcrivi*, *j'ay eſcrit*, *eſcrire*, *eſcrivant*. So *deſcrire*, *inſcrire*, *preſcrire*, *proſcrire*, *reſcrire*, *ſouſcrire*, *tranſcrire*.

¶ I frye, *Ie fri: je fri*, *j'ay frit*, *frire*, *friant*.

¶ I know, *Ie cognoy*, or *connoy*: *nous connoiſſons*, *je conneu*, *j'ay connu*, *Connoiſtre*, *connoiſſant*. So *Deſconnoiſtre*, *meſconnoiſtre*, *reconnoiſtre*.

¶ I melt, *Ie fon*, or *fons*: *nous fondons*, *ie fondi*, *j'ay fondu*, *fondre*, *fondant*. So *Confondre*, *morfondre*, *refondre*; alſo *Tondre*, *reſpondre*, *correſpondre*; alſo *Rompre*.

¶ I make, or doe, *Ie fay*, *ais*, *ait*, *Nous faiſons*, *vous faites*, *ils font*. *Ie fi*, or *fei*, *j'ay fait*, *Faire*, *faiſant*, *je feray*. Imperative, *Fay*, *qu'il face*, *faiſons*, *faites*, *qu'ils facent*. Preſent optative, *que je face*. So *Defaire*, *contrefaire*, *forfaire*, *meffaire*, *parfaire*, *refaire*, *ſatisfaire*, *ſurfaire*.

¶ I ſhine, *Ie luy*, *je luiſi*, *j'ay luy*, *luire*, *luiſant*. So *Reluire*, *entreluire*; alſo *Nuire*.

¶ I put, *Ie mets*, *je mis*, *j'ay mis*, *Mettre*, *mettant*. So *Admettre*, *commettre*, *demettre*, *permettre*, *promettre*.

¶ I bite, *Ie mor: nous mordons*, *je mordi*, *j'ay mors*, or *morda*, *mordre*, *mordant*. So *demordre*, *remordre*; alſo *Tordre*,

Tordre, détordre, retordre.

¶ I grind, *Ie mouds*, or *meuds*, *je moulu*, *j'ay moulu*, *Moudre*, or *meudre*, *Moulant* or *meulant*. So *Esmoudre*.

¶ I am borne, *Ie nais*, *je naſqui*, *je ſuis nay*, or *né*. *Naiſtre*, or *naſquir*, not ſo much uſed. *Naiſſant*, *Ie naiſtray*, or *naſquiray*, ſeldome uſed.

¶ I abſolve, *I'abſouds*, *j'abſolu*, *je abſoult*, or *abſolu*, *Abſoudre*, *Abſolvant*. So *Diſſoudre*.

¶ I ſlay, *I'occi*: *nous occions*, or *occiſons*. *I'occis*, *j'ay occis*, *Occire*, or *occir*, *occiant*.

¶ I feed, *Ie pais*: *nous paiſſons*, *je peu*, *j'ay peu*, *paiſtre*, *paiſſant*. So *Repaiſtre*.

¶ I loſe, *Ie pers*: *nous perdons*, *je perdi*, *j'ay perdu*, *Perdre*, *Perdant*. So *Reperdre*.

¶ I pleaſe, *Ie plais*: *nous plaiſons*. *je pleu*, *j'ay pleu*, *plaire*, *plaiſant*. So *complaire*, *deſplaire*.

¶ I lay an egge, *Ie pons*, or *ponds*, *je pondi*, or *ponni*, or *ponnu*. *I'ay ponds*, or *pondu*, or *ponnu*, *Pondre*, *ponnant*, or *pondant*.

¶ I take, *Ie pren*: *nous prenons*. *je prin*, *prins*, or *pris*, *j'ay pris*, or *prins*, *prendre*, *prenant*.

The third perſon plurall of the definite, *ils prindrent*, or *prirent*. So *apprendre*, *comprendre*, *deſaprendre*, *entreprendre*, *eſprendre*, *meſprendre*, *reprendre*, *ſurprendre*.

¶ I ſhave, *Ie ray*, *tu rais*, *il rait*, *Nous raſons*. *j'ay rais*, *raire*, *je rairay*. Imperative, *Ray*.

¶ I laugh. *Ie ri*, *je ri*, *j'ay ri*, *je riray*, *rire*, *riant*.

¶ I

¶ I ſummon, *Ie ſemonds, je ſemonni* or *ſemondi*: *I'ay ſemonnu*, or *ſemons, ſemondre, ſemonnant*, or *ſemondant*.

¶ I ſolve, *Ie ſouds, je ſolu*, or *ſolvi*, *I'ay ſolu, ſoudre, ſolvant*.

¶ I riſe, or ſpring up, *Ie ſourds, je ſourdi, j'ay ſours, ſourdre, ſourdant*. It is more uſed impersonally, *Il ſourd, il ſourdit, il eſt ſours, il ſourdra*.

¶ I follow, *Ie ſui: nous ſuivons, je ſuivi, j'ay ſuivi. Suivre*, or *ſuvir* little uſed. *Suivant*. So *Acconſuivre, enſuivre, entreſuivre, pourſuivre*.

¶ I am ſilent, *Ie tay, je ten. j'ay teu, taire, taiſant*. Or rather *Ie me tay, je me teu, je me ſuis teu, je me tairay*.

¶ I draw, *Ie tray, je trahi, j'ay trait, traire, trayant*. So *Attraire, diſtraire, extraire, pourtraire, ſouſtraire, fortraire*.

¶ I weave, *Ie tis, je tiſſi, j'ay tiſſu, Tiſtre*, or *tiſſer, Tiſſant, je tiſtray*.

¶ I overcome, *Ie vainc*, or *vanes*, or *vanqs, Ie vainqui, j'ay vaincu, vaincre, vainquant, Ie vaincray*. So *ſurvaincre, convaincre*.

¶ I live, *Ie vi: nous vivons, Ie veſqui*, or *veſcu, I'ay veſcu, vivre, vivant*. So *revivre*, and *ſurvivre*.

Of Verbs Impersonalls.

To conjugate verbes impersonalls, is to runne through all the third persons singular; according to the conjugation unto which they belong; which is knowne by the termination of their infinitives.

finitives. We have two ſorts of Impersonalls: one, which ſeemeth of a paſſive ſenſe, hath *On* or *Lon* afore it, as *On dit, dicitur*, men ſay, they ſay, or it is ſaid, *On aime*, one loveth, men love, they love. *On eſt aimé*, one is loved, men are loved. *On court*, men runne, they runne, or one runneth, &c. Another ſort are actives, and have afore them the partic. *Il*, it, or there. All of the firſt conjugation are regular, except *Il va*: as *Il reſte, il faſche, il tarde, il ſoucie, il conſte, il couſte, il grieve, il poiſe*, or *péſe, il importe, il manque, il regne, il profite, il tombe, il arrive, il ſemble, il démange, il gele, il tonne, il greſſe, il eſclaire, il neige, il ſe trouve, il ſe controuve, il ſ'invente, il ſe forge, il ſe meſle, il ſe range*, &c. Of the ſecond, *Il vient, il convient, il advient, il intervient, il provient, il ſouvient, il tient, il appartient, il ſert, il court, il meurt, il ſort, il ſe nourrit, il ſe pourrit, il ſe ravit*, &c. Of the third, *Il ſied, il chet, il eſchet, il vaut, il faut, il chaut, il dent, il pert, il appert, il apparoiſt, il pleut, il ya, il ſe void, il ſe croit, il ſe reçoit, il ſ'apperçoit*, &c. Of the 4th, *Il eſt, il ſourd, il naiſt, il prend, il pend, il cuit, il duit, il nuit, il ſuffit, il fait, il ſe fait, il plaiſt, il croiſt, il ſe met, il ſe permet, il ſ'enſuit, il ſe commet, il ſe rompt, il ſe perd*, &c. In a word, all verbes actives and paſſives may become impersonalls, by ſetting *il*, with the pronoune *ſe*, afore their third persons, as *Il ſe prouve, il ſe traite, il ſe rencontre, il ſe ſeme, il ſe cueille, il ſe convertit, il ſe divertit, il ſ'eſclaircit*, &c. infinitely.

Il faut, il chaut, il vaut, is thus conjugated. *Il*

faut

faut, it behooveth. Imperfect, *il faloit*, perfect, *il fallut*, 2. perfect, *il a falu*. Infinitive, *faloir*. Future, *il faudra*. Opt. preſent, *il faille*. So *Il chaut*, *il chaloit*, &c *il vaut*, *il valoit*, &c. *Il y a* is conjugated throughout the third perſons ſingular of *Avoir*, putting *il* and *y* afore; as *Il y a*, there is, *il y avoit*, there was, *il y eut*, there was, *il y a eu*, there hathbeene, *il y avoit eu*, there had bin. *il y aura*, there ſhall be, &c. *Il loiſt*, is defective, and hath onely *il loiſt*, it is lawfull, *il loſoit*, and preſent Optat. *il loiſe*. *Aſſiert* is alſo defective, and hath onely, *il affert*, it belongeth, or is the dutie, *Il afferoit*, *il affera*, and preſent optat. *qu'il affére*.

Chap. VII.

Of Adverbs, and the other undeclinable parts.

VEry many Adverbes (eſpecially of quality) are made (as alſo in Engliſh) of Adjectives, by adding to the termination *Ment*; as in Engliſh the termination *Ly*; as *Sagement* wiſely, *prudemment* prudently, *legerement* lightly, *abondamment* abundantly, *ſecondement* ſecondly, *ſuperfluëment* ſuperfluouſly, &c. And ſometimes Adjectives themſelves are put for adverbes, as *Parlez clair* for *clairement*, ſpeake plainely. *Allez viſte* for *viſtement*, goe quickly. So *juſte*, *fort*, *droit*, *haut*, *leger*, *ſoudain*, and many others are uſed.

The other Adverbs, Conjunctions, Prepoſitions, &c. becauſe they doe often much trouble the lear-

learner, I thought good here, though promiſcuouſly and diſorderly, yet alphabetically, to ſet downe for their better finding; at leaſt, ſo many of them as doe moſt frequently occurre.

A to, at, in, by, for.
à l'advenir, in time to come.
à cauſe, by cauſe.
à coſté, à coſtiere, aſide, ſide-wiſe.
à coup, at once, ſpeedily.
à coup perdu, in vaine.
à tous coups, eft-ſoones
à la droite, on the right hand.
à la gauche, on the left hand.
à fin que, à ce que, à fin de, to the end that.
à la fin, in the end.
à la par fin, at the laſt.
à peine, ſcarcely.
à grand peine, with much adoe.
à heure, in time.
à temps, in time.
à l'heure, at the houre.
à la bonne heure, luckily, in good time.
à ceſte heure, now.
à l'inſtant, at that inſtant.
alorſque, then when.
à l'heure que, at the houre when.
à chef de piece, in the end, at length.
aga, ſee, looke.
à jamais, for ever.
à tout jamais, or *à touſiours mais*, for ever and ever.
à raiſon dequoy, by reaſon whereof.
à l'eſcart, à quartier, apart, aſide, aſunder.
à part, aſide, apart.
à l'eſcient, wittingly, or of ſet purpoſe.
à bon eſcient, in good earneſt.

à guiſe, à la guiſe, à mode, à la mode, after the manner or faſhion.

à l'entour, about, or round about.

à couvert, covertly.

à découvert, openly.

ains, ainſois, or *ainçois*, but, but rather, ere.

ainſois que, albeit.

ainſi, ſo, as, like as.

ainſi que, ſo as, whilſt that, like as.

ailleurs, elſewhere.

alors, then, *alors que*, when, then when.

à la volee, raſhly, at randome.

à l'endroit, to the right place.

à l'environ, thereabouts, round abouts.

à condition que, à la charge que, on condition that.

à raiſon que, à meſure que, by meaſure, or degrees as, even as, by how much as.

à droit, by right.

à tort, wrongfully, wrong.

à point, aptly, in due time.

à bon droit, by good right.

à temps, in time.

à point nommé, in good time, at the time appointed, fitly.

à la haſte, haſtily, in haſt.

à la chaude, hotly, in a heat.

ainſi comme, like as.

à l'aide, au ſecours, help, helpe.

à l'arme, arme, arme.

au meurtre, murder, murder.

au feu, fire, fire, &c.

à l'encontre, againſt.

apres, after.

à plus prés, within a little.

à peu prés, or *au peu prés*, well-neere, almoſt.

au plus prés, as neere as

as may be.
à l'envi, in despite, or emulation, or strife one of another.
à qui mieux, mieux, with strife who shall doe best.
à qui pis-pis, with strife who shall do worst.
à l'adventure, by chance.
à tout hasard, at al adventure.
à tant, thus, by this, hereupon.
à pur et à plain, flatly, plainly.
à plein, fully.
à clair, cleerely.
à net, neatly, *au net*, exactly, perfectly.
à sec, as *estre a sec*, to be on dry ground, or gravelled.
à profit de mesnage, roundly, throughly, to purpose.
à nud, mettre à nud, to strip.
à blanc, mettre à blanc, to strip into the shirt.
à la pareille, for the like good turne. so *au reciproque*.
à matin, at morning, *au matin*, in the morning:
à soir, at evening, *au soir* in the evening.
arriere, behind: away no more.
asçavoir, to wit, that is to say.
asçavoir mon, whether or no?
à tout le moins, au moins, at the least, at least.
à l'impourveu, à despourveu, à l'improviste, au despourveu, at unawares, suddenly, unlooked for.
à l'estourdi, amazedly, heedlesly, rashly.
assez, enough.
assez long temps, a very long time.
attendu que, seeing that, or considering that.
à travers, au travers, athwart, crosselv.
assez peu, little enough.

à rebours, au rebours, à contre pied, à contre-poil, backward, contrariwise, against the hair, kimkam.
au contraire, on ꝑcõtrary.
au, and plurall number *aux*, to the, at the, in the, for the.
au moien dequoy, by means whereof.
au plus, at the most.
au moins, at the least.
avant, before, forth, forward.
avant-hier, two daies ago
avec, with. *avec ce*, with all.
avec le temps, at length, in time.
au dedans, within, inwardly.
au dehors, without, outwardly.
au loing, afar off, aloof off
aucune fois, sometime.
au derriere, behind.
au devant par derriere, the wrong way.
au devant, before.
au dessus, above, on high.
au dessous, under, beneath, below, underneath.
au deça, on this side, on the hither side.
au delà, on that side, beyond, on the further side.
au bout de tout, at length; so *à la longue*.
aujourd'huy, to day, at this day.
aux entours, thereabouts.
autour, about, round about.
au regard, in respect.
au demourant, moreover.
au mieux aller, let the best come to the best.
au pis aller, let the worst come to the worst, come what may.
au pis, at the worst.
au prix, in comparison.
au reste, moreover; so *au surplus*.
au prealable, first and formost, after the rate.
aussi, also, so, as.

times

autrement, otherwise.
autre fois, heretofore, in times past.
au paravant, before, before time, heeretofore.
autant, as much, as well. as many, so much, so many.
autant de fois, as many times.
Beaucoup, much, many.
Bien, well, very; else.
Bien peu, very little.
Bien que, although.
Bas, under, low, below.
Bonnement, well.
Bellement, fairely, gently, softly, leisurely.
bonne piece, a good while agoe.
ça, hither, to this place, come hither, give hither.
ça & là, here and there, hither and thither, scatteringly.
ça-sus, here above.
ça-haut, here on high.
ça-bas, here beneath.
ça-ça, come ho, forward.
Car, for.
Ceans, here within.
Cependant, in the meane while, in the meane time.
Certes, certainement, truly.
Chez moy, with me, at my house, at home. *Chez luy*, at his house, &c.
Comme, as, like as.
Comme ainsi soit que, albeit, howsoever it bee that.
Comment, how.
Combien, how much? how many?
Combien que, although.
Combien de fois, how many times?
Combien y-a-il? how many is there? how much is there? how long is it agoe?
Contre, against.
Cy, here, hither.
Cy-apres, hereafter.
Cy-devant, heretofore.

Coup—sur-coup, often, eftſoones.

D'abondant, d'advantage, moreover.

D'abordee, d'abordade, d'arrivee, at firſt, at firſt ſight, comming or meeting. So ſoone as come.

D'entree, d'intrade, at firſt entrance, ſo ſoone as come in.

D'adventure, de fortune, de cas fortuit, by chance, perhaps, peradventure, by fortune.

De prime face, at firſt ſight, at firſt.

D'aſſeurance, boldly, with confidence.

D'an en an, from yeare to yeare, *de jour en jour*, from day to day.

De bien en mieux, from good to better, better and better, ſo *de mieux en mieux*, better and better.

De mal en pis, from evill to worſe, worſe and worſe.

De pis en pis, worſe and worſe.

D'ailleurs, fromelſewhere from another place.

Dans, dedans, in, within.

De dedans, du dedans, from within.

D'autant que, for as much as.

De, of, from, with.

Du, des, of the, from the, &c.

De bonne heure, early, betimes, in good time.

D'avec, from.

deça, on this ſide, hither.

delà, on that ſide, over, beyond, from thence.

de ceans, of this houſe.

d'icy, hence.

de pardeça, on this ſide.

de pardela, on that ſide.

d'ici pres, hard by.

de jour, by day.

de

de nuit, by night.
d'illec, from thence.
d'enhaut, from on high, from above.
d'embas, from beneath, or from below.
Dehors, out, without, abroad.
de dehors, from abroad.
du dehors, from without, or from abroad.
d'ici à peu, a little hence, a while hence, it wants but little time and ſpace to it.
De loing, from farre, a far off.
D'heure à heure, *d'heure en heure*, from houre to houre.
De ranc en ranc, from ranke to ranke.
De point en point, from point to point.
De fois à autre, eſtſoones, ever and anon, from time to time.
De guet à pens, willingly, of ſet purpoſe, with premeditation.
Dea, or *Dâ*, as *Ouy dâ*, yea truely. *Non dâ*, no truely.
De maniere que, *de ſorte que*, in ſuch ſort as, ſo that.
De meſme, in like manner, in like ſort, likewiſe.
Demain, to morrow.
de demain, by to morrow.
de matin, by morning, in the morning.
du matin, of, or from the morning.
de ſoir, by, or in the evening.
du ſoir, of, or from the evening.
derriere, behind, on the backepart, or ſide.
de derriere, *du derriere*, behind; of, or from behind.
devant, before, or the foreſide.
de devant, *du devant*, before,

fore, on the foreſide, of or from before.

De fait advoy, de propos deliberé, of ſet purpoſe, of an adviſed purpoſe.

de plein gré, with full liking, with full mind and good will.

Depuis, ſince, ſithence, from.

du depuis, ſince thence, ſince, or from that time.

de peur que, leaſt, leaſt that for feare that, or for feare leaſt.

de ranc, deſuite, by ranke, one after another.

d'ordre, by order.

Des, from, ſince.

Deſque, ſo ſoone as.

deſ-l'heure que, from the houre, or time that.

deſlors, from that time forth.

deſ-ja, already.

deſormais, from henceforth.

de ſurcroiſt, de par eu ſus, de ſurplus, du ſurplus, de par deſſus; of overplus, over and above, over and beſides, moreover.

De renfort, abundantly.

Derechef, againe.

Deſſus, above, upon, over, on, on high.

Deſſous, under, underneath, below, beneath.

devers, towards.

Devant, afore, *avaunt*, hence.

Deux fois, twice.

De vray, in truth.

De fait, indeed, throughly.

Donc, doncques, then.

Devant hier, two dayes agoe.

Dont, whereof, whence, whereby, wherewith, whereupon.

Doreſenâvant, darenavant, from henceforth, henceforward.

D'où, whence, from whence.

d' outre,

d'outre, en outre, through, and through.
Du commencement, from, or at the beginning.
Du temps de, in the time of.
Du temps paſsé, in times paſt.
Du tout, wholly, altogegether, throughly.
Droit en ce lieu, iuſt here, or in this place.
du val á mont, upwards, from the bottome to the top.
du mont à val, from the top to the bottome.
En, and plurall *es*, in, into.
En apres, afterwards.
En outre, moreover.
En fin, in the end.
En haut, on high.
En bas, below.
En amont, upwards.
En tout advenement, whatſoever happen.
En-y-a, agoe.
En-là, from thence.
Enhuy, to day, this day.
Enda, in faith, in truth.
Emmi, amidſt, in or through the midſt.
Encore, yet.
Encoreque, although.
Encontre, towards, againſt, right againſt, over againſt.
Endroit, by, neere about, towards.
En baſte, in haſt, haſtily.
En verité, in truth, truely.
Enſemble, together.
Entre, between, amongſt.
Entre-deux, indifferently, between both.
Entantque, in as much as.
Envers, towards.
Environ, about.
Entour, about, round about.
Expres, of purpoſe.

Finalement. at laſt, laſtly.
Fin que, untill that.
Fin à tel jour, till ſuch adv

a day.

Fin de conte, finally.

Fi, fy, fy away, (an interjection)

Fors, forſque, except, vnleſſe: out.

Fort, very, very much, exceedingly, ſtrongly.

Gare, ware, beware.

Gare le beurt, ware-horns

Gueres, guere, little, ſmall, but little, not much, not long.

Guere ſouvent, ſeldome.

Haulte heure, farre day.

Hier, yeſterday.

Herſoir, yeſternight.

Haut, highly, above, aloft.

aloud, on high.

Hors, out, without.

Hors d'icy, hence.

Hormis, except, ſaving that.

Huy, to day, this day.

Ia, well-neere; lacking little: never, already.

Iadis, of old, in times paſt

Iaçoitque, Iaſoitque, although, albeit.

Iamais, never.

Ici, here. *Icy, illic*, there, thither.

Incontinent, forthwith.

Ia n'adveene que. God forbid that. *Ia à Dieu ne plaiſe que*, God forbid.

Incontinentque, ſo ſoone as.

Ioignant, neere to.

Ioint que, moreover, beſides that, alſo that.

Iournellement, daily.

Ius, down, to the ground

Iouxte, nigh to, according to.

Iuſques, untill, till, unto.

Iuſqu' à quand, Iuſques à quand, how long? untill when, or till how long.

Iuſqu' à tantque, Iuſques à tantque, Iuſqu' à ceque, Iuſques à ceque, till ſuch time as, untill that.

Là, there, thither.

Là,

Là bas, there below, beneath, downewards.
Là haut, on high, above.
Leans, there within.
Le moins du monde, the leaſt that can be.
Le lendemain, the next day.
Le paſſé, in times paſt.
Loing, farre, far off.
Lors, then.
Lorſque, when as, then when.
Mais, but.
Matin, morning.
Mais de, more, any more.
Maiſque, but what, ſo that.
Maiſ-huy, not to day, not ſo long as this day laſts.
Meſhuy, the ſame.
Maintenant, now.
Maintes fois, oftentimes.
Mal, ill, naughtily.
Malement, the ſame.
Midi noone.
Minuit midnight.
Mieux, better.
Malaiſement, hardly, uneaſily, difficultly.
Meſmes, meſmemẽt, namely, eſpecially.
Moins, leaſt, leſſe.
Mon, as *C'eſt mon*, yes indeed, *aſçavoir mon ſi*, whether.
Mout, much, greatly.
Moyennant que, ſo that.
Moyennement, meanely, moderately, indifferently.
N'agueres, not long ſince, ere while, of late.
Ne, no, nor, neither.
Nenni, no.
Neantmoins, nevertheleſſe.
Ni, ny, nor, neither.
Non, no, not.
Non pas? is it not?
Non obſtant, notwithſtanding.
Non pourtant, not for all that, notwithſtanding.

Nul-

Nullement, no whit at all, in no caſe, in no ſort.
Nulle part, no where.
Onc, ever, at any time.
Oncques, ever, (and with a negative) never.
Or avant, on forward.
Or, *ares*, now.
Or bien, well then, now well.
Or ça, *orſus*, goe to, well then.
Or donques, ſeeing then.
Or ſi, if then.
Or-primes, *à or-primes*, now at length: but even now, not before now.
Ores, now. *Ores que*, though now, when.
Ou, or, either, or els.
Où, where, whither, whereas.
Ou bien, or els.
Oultre, *outre*, over, beyond, beſides, further, furthermore.
Outreplus, moreover.
Ouy, *cy*, yea, yes.
Ouy-da, yes indeed.
Ouy-bien, but indeede, affirme.
Par, by, through.
Par ainſi, ſo, even ſo, by this meanes, therfore.
Par ailleurs, by ſome other way, by ſome way els.
Par apres, afterwards.
par aupres, neer, hard-by.
par aventure, peradventure.
par-cy par-ci, this way.
par-là, that way.
par-de-ça, on this ſide.
Par-de-là, on that ſide, beyond.
Parce que, becauſe that, for as much as.
Par dedans, within, on the in-ſide, inwardly.
Par dehors, without, outwardly, on the out-ſide.
Par devant, before, on the fore-part, in preſence.
Par derriere, behinde, backward.
Par deſſus, upon, upward, above,

above, aloft, over and above.

Par dessous, under, underneath.

Par dévers, towards.

Paravant, before, heretofore, in times past.

Pareillement, likewise.

Par-fois, now and then.

Partant, therfore, on this condition.

Partel si que, on condition that, so that.

Parmi, amidst, amongst.

Parcidevant, heretofore, in former times.

Parle passé, in times past.

Par où, which way.

Par temps, in good time.

Par tout, every where, throughout.

Par trop, too much.

Parquoy, why? therefore, for this cause, for which cause.

Pas, not.

Pas à pas, step by step.

Pesle-mesle, confusedly.

Pendant celà, in the mean time.

Pendant que, whilest that.

Petit à petit, leisurely, by little and little, faire and softly.

Peu à peu, by little and little.

Peu, little, few, a small deale.

Peu s'en faut, little wanteth it, well neere.

Peu souvent, seldome.

Peu de chose, a small matter.

peu apres, a while after.

peu-plus, peu-moins, little more or lesse.

Peut estre, it may be, perhaps.

Pis, worse, worst.

Pieça, long agoe, a great while since.

Pirement, as *pis*.

Plus, more.

Plusieurs fois, many times.

Plustost, sooner, rather.

Plus pres, neerer.

Plus loing, farther off.

Plus

Plus outre, further.
Plus haut, higher.
Plus bas, lower.
point, nor.
Pour, for; instead.
Pour le plus, at the most.
Pour le moins, at the least.
Pour le mieux, for the best.
Pourquoy? why? wherefore?
Pource, because, therefore.
Pourveu que, so that, on condition that.
Pourtant, notwithstanding, for all that.
Pourtant que, because that, for as much as.
Pourautant que, for as much as.
Possible, pephaps.
Pose le cas que, put case that.
Premierement, *prealablement*, first, first and formost.
Pres, neere, nigh, wellnigh.
Presque, almost, wellnigh.
Promptement, *prestement*, and *prest*, readily, quickly.
Prou, enough, much greatly.
Puis, then, moreover.
Puis apres, afterwards, next after.
Puisque, seeing that.
Quand, when, though.
Quand à, or *quant à*, as for, as touching.
Quant et, together with.
Quant & quant, foorthwith, by and by.
Quasi, almost, as it were.
Quantes fois, how often, how many times.
Que, that, as; than; but, saving.
Que bien, que mal, indifferently; well or ill, one way or other.
Quelque fois, sometimes.
Quelque part, some where

Quel-

Quelqur, part que, wheresoever, whither soever.
Quelque peu, some little, some few, a very little.
Qu'ainsi soit, that so it is.
Quoy? what? why? how?
quoy que, although, howsoever.

Rarement, seldome.
Rien, any thing, or (with a negative) nothing.
Riére, backeward, behind.
Sans, without.
Sauf, saving.
Selon, according to; even as.
Semblablement, likewise.
Sens dessus dessous, topsieturvie, upside-downe. So *sens dessoubs dessus.*
Sens devant derriere, the wrong way, preposterously, the cart before the horse.
Seulement, onely.
Si, if, if so bee that, whether; so; yes.
Si que, so as, so that.
Si toſt, so soone.
Si toſt que, so soone as.
Sinon, unlesse, but.
Sinon que, but that, saving that.
Si eſt-ceque, yet so it is that.
Si ce n'eſt, unlesse it be.
Soir, evening.
Sur le ſoir, toward evening.
Sur le tard, somewhat late.
Sur, on, upon, over, above.
Soubs, or *ſous*, under, underneath, beneath.
Soit, be it.
Souvent, often.
Sovente fois, oftentimes.
Soudain, suddenly.
Soudain que, so soone as.
Sur le champ, presently.
Surce, hereupon.

Sus,

Sus, on, up, upon, over, above.
Sus de bout, up an end.
Sus avant, on before.
Tard, late, lately.
Tardement, slowly, lingringly.
Tandis, whilest.
Tant, so as, so much, so great, so many, so long, so well, as well.
Tant seulement, onely.
Tant soit peu, never so little, how little soever.
Tant pour tant, ratably.
Tant que, so much as, so many as, so long as.
Tantost, anon, by and by, forthwith.
Tellement, so, in such sort.
Tellement quellement, so so, indifferently.
Tout ainsi, even as, like as,
Tout autant, even as well, even as much, iust as much, or as many.
Tout beau, soft and faire, not too fast, so *Tout bellement*.
Tout à coup, suddenly.
Tout à fait, throughly, wholly.
Tout à un coup, all at once, or one time.
Tost, soone.
Tout à l'heure, at the very instant.
Tout incontinent, presently.
Tout outre, through and through, wholly.
Tout à point, fitly.
Tout à la fois, all at once.
Totalement, wholly.
Toutes fois, notwithstanding, yet, albeit.
Toutes-fois & quantes, as often; so *Toutes & quantes fois*.
Touſiours, alwayes.
Tous les iours, every day.
Tour à tour, turne by turne.
Tout d'un train, all at one clap or time.
Treſ à bon eſcient, in very good

good earneſt, moſt earneſtly.
Tres-arriere, exceeding backward.
Tresbien, very well.
Treſmal, very ill.
Treſpeu, very little, very few.
Treſpres, very neer.
Treſloin, very farre.
Treſhaut, moſt high.
Tresbas, moſt lowe.
Treſoutre, farre beyond.
Trop, too much, too, over-much, greatly, much.
Trop peu, too little.
Vers, towards.
Veu, ſeeing, conſidering.
Veu que, ſeeing that.
Viz a viz, right againſt.
Viſtement, and (in ſteed thereof) *viſte*, quickly, ſpeedily.
Vniment, with one accord.
Voire, yea, yea but, ſurely
Voirement, certainly, forſooth, indeed.
Volontiers, willingly.
Voici, ſee heere, looke heer, behold.
Voila, ſee there, looke there, behold.
Vrayement, truely.

Chap. VIII.

Of the Syntax or Conſtruction of the parts.

Firſt, of the Articles.

THeſe three, *le*, *la*, and *les*, being ſet afore verbs, and following them in conſtruction, are not Articles, but Pronounes; and beeing ſet afore Nounes, are Articles. Examples of both: *L'eſprit ſ' engourdit, auſſi bien que le corps, ſi on ne le façonne d'exercice de bonnes letres; et les vices ſ' y rampent aiſement,*

ſement, qui ne les ſarcle & arrache par meditation & action de vertu: The minde waxeth lumpiſh, as well as the body, if wee doe not faſhion it by the exerciſe of good lirerature; and vices doe eaſily creep into it, if we doe not weed and pluck them up by meditation, and action of vertue. *La vertu eſt la vraye ſource de nobleſſe; ſuivons-la:* vertue is the true originall of nobility; let us follow it.

Secondly, they are ſet afore Pronounes Poſſeſſives; as, *Le mien* mine, *le voſtre* yours. Thirdly, afore Participles having the force of Nounes, as, *L' ignorant*, the ignorant: *le malfaiteur*, the evill-doer. Fourthly, afore Verbs of the infinitive Mood, put for Nounes; as, *Le boire, & le manger, le ſauter, & le voltiger, ſont noſtre vie alonger:* good cheer and merriment lengthen out our life. Fiftly, afore ſome Prepoſitions ſet alone without Nounes; as, *Cet homme a belle apparence par le dehors, Ie neſçay comme il eſt par le dedans:* this man makes a fair ſhew outwardly, I know not how he is within. *L' ennemi a gaigné le deſſus:* the enemie hath gotten the upper hand.

For *de*, note; that where Adjectives are wanting, it ſeemeth to ſupply their place; as, *Authorité de Roy*, a Kings authority; for *authorité royale. Ouvrage d' homme* or *humain.* Thus *de* is engliſhed Of; as, *poiſſon de riveere*, river-fiſh, or fiſh of the river; *verdure d' herbe*, greenneſs of graſſe; *viſteſſe de pieds*, ſwiftnes of feet: And ſo, generally, is u-

ſed

ſed in thoſe phraſes which the Latines put in the Genitive or Ablative Caſes; as, *Homme de grande doctrine*, a man of great learning; *jeune homme de grande eſperance*, a young man of great hope; *joyau de prix*, a jewell of price; *cheval de cent eſcus*, a horſe of an hundred crownes; *homme de bien*, an honeſt man, *d'honneur* of credit, *de ſçavoir* of knowledge, *d'eſprit* of wit, &c.

Secondly, *de* is alſo uſed when we expreſſe the efficient cauſe; as, *bruſler d'amour*, to burne with love; *ſouſpirer de triſteſſe*, to ſigh with ſorrow; *pallir de peur*, to be pale with feare; *rougir de honte*, to be red, or bluſh with ſhame. Thirdly, *de* is uſed when the matter is expreſſed whereof a thing is made; as, *Pourpoint de ſatin*, a ſattin doublet; *Maiſon de pierre*, a ſtone-houſe; *Armures d'acier*, ſteele armour: *Bas de ſoye*, ſilke ſtockings. Fourthly, *de* is uſed with Adverbes: as afore ſome of place, *Le maiſtre de ceans*, the maiſter of this houſe: *Le gouverneur d'icy*, the governour of this place: *Il vient de chez nous*, hee comes from our houſe. After theſe of quantity, *Combien*, *tant*, *autant*, *plus*, *beaucoup*, *aſſez*, *peu*, *prou*, *d'avantage*, *moins*; as, *Beaucoup d'argent*, much money; *peu d'eſprit*, little wit; *aſſez de vin*, wine enough, &c. Of denying; as, *a la faim n'y a point de mauvais pain*, courſe bread is welcome to the hungry. Of diſdaining; as, *Fy de plaiſirs, d'eſtat & d'or, qui de vertu n'a le threſor*, fie on the pleaſure, honour and wealth, that hath

not the treaſure of vertue. Fiftly, *de* is alſo applied to all Nounes and Verbs importing a ſcantling or certain quantity of matter; as, *Potee de vin*, a pot-full of wine; *chartee de foin*, a cart-load of hay; *paneree de fruits*, a basket-full of fruit; *chambree de filles*, a chamber-full of maidens: alſo *remplir de vin*, to fill with wine; *garnir de pierreries*, to garniſh with precious ſtones; *pourvoir de neceſſaires*, to provide with neceſſaries. So their contraries, *Deſgarnir*, *deſemplir*, *manquer*, &c. And heer let the Engliſh take heed, that in ſtead of *de*, they uſe not *avec* with; but ſay, *Garni d'argent*, not *avec de l'argent*, furniſhed with money; *orné de vertus*, not *avec de vertus*, adorned with vertues; *paree de tapiſſerie*, hung with tapeſtrie, &c. Sixtly, *de* is uſed in a frequent phraſe importing diſdaine, and beginning with *ce*, *un*, or the like; as, *Ce glouton de Thomas*, that gluttonous fellow Thomas; *un vaurien de laquais*, an ungracious lackey; *mon veillard de mari*, the old man my huſband: and ſometime in good part; as, *Mon bon homme de pere*, the good old man my father; *ma bonne femme de mere*, the good woman my mother. Laſtly, *de* before proper names is ſomtimes omitted by Eclipſis; as, *La place Maubert*, the place of Maubert; *la rue Saint Denis*, Saint Deniſe-ſtreet; *l'eſgliſe*, *le pont*, *l'enſeigne noſtre Dame*, for *de noſtre Dame*, the church, the bridge, the ſigne of our Lady; *la porte Saint Marceau*, the gate of Saint

Saint Marceau; *l' Apocalypſe Saint Iean*, the Revelation of Saint Iohn: And alſo in this proverbial ſpeech. *C' eſt le ventre ma mere*, for *de ma mere, je n'y retourne plus*, I will come no more there.

An exception from the fourth rule aboveſaid is, when one of the ſaid Adverbs of quantitie is ſet after the Subſtantive ſignifying the matter: for then (in ſtead of the indefinite *de*) are the definite Articles uſed; as *Vous aurez de l'argent aſſez*, you ſhall have money enough, in ſtead of *aſſez d' argent: il y a du courage trop*, for *trop de courage*, he hath courage too much; *de la faveur beaucoup*, or *beaucoup de faveur*, much favour. *I' ay du credit autant que vous*, or *autant de credit que vous*, I have as much credit as you. Alſo *pres* and *aupres* uſe the definite Articles; as, *Aupres du feu*, neere the fire, or by the fire ſide; *pres de l' Egliſe, loin de Dieu*; the neerer the Church, the farther from God. Alſo *bien* ſtanding for *beaucoup*; as, *Il a bien du pouvoir, du ſçavoir, de l' entendement, de la vertu*: hee hath much power, knowledge, underſtanding, vertue: *vous prenez bien de la peine pour moy*, you take much paines for me: *les guerres civiles ont bien apporté des calamites en France*, the civill warres have brought many calamities into France. Alſo after words of quantity, when there is ſome reſtrictive tearm reſtraining the Subſtantive, then may either the definite or indefinite Articles be uſed indifferently; as, *Combien avez vous acheté des livres*, or *de livres*

de ce libraire? how many books have you bought of this bookſeller? *voicy un bouquet des fleurs*, or *de fleurs de mon jardin*, heere is a poſie of flowres of my garden. The word *Force*, ſignifying quantity, hath no article afore nor after; as, *Force biens*, much goods; *force eſcus*, many crownes, or ſtore of crowns; *force ennuis*, many ſorrows: but when it ſignifieth ſtrength or force, it hath afore it the Article *à*, and *de* after it; as, *à force d'argent*, by force of money; *à force d'hommes*, by ſtrength of men.

Saint & *Maiſtre*, joined to ſome proper name, are conſtrued with indefinite Articles; as, *Les œuvres de Saint Auguſtin*, Saint Auſten's workes; *I'ay parlé à Monſieur Iean*, I have ſpoken to or with Maiſter Iohn.

Monſieur, *Madame*, and *Madamoiſelle*, in phraſes denoting a fooliſh and preſumptuous imitation, do admit the definite articles; as, *Vous faites du Monſieur*, you play the Gentleman; *Voila une gueuſe qui trenche de la Damoiſelle*, there is a begger cuts it out like a Gentlewoman: *Voicy un ſot, qui taille du brave*; heer is a foole, that would make himſelfe a brave fellow. So wee ſay, *Faire la Damoiſelle*, to play the Gentlewoman; *Faire le ſuffiſant*, or *du ſuffiſant*, to make himſelfe a ſufficient man; *Tailler*, *trencher*, or *coucher du Gentilhomme*, to play the Gentleman.

A, *au*, *à l'*, *à la*, *aux* and *és*, are Prepoſitions, and

and doe lend us the dative caſe. The article *à*, being of the common gender, and of both numbers, is of value wholly indefinite; as, *Il appartient à Roy de gouverner*, &c. it belongs to a King to governe, that is, to any King whatſoever: and we may alſo ſay, *Il appertient à un roy*, &c. *A chiens*, or *à des chiens hargneux aureilles dechirees*, mangie dogs have torn ears.

Firſt, by this article *à*, wee ſhew the uſe to wch a thing is dedicated, or the final cauſe; as, *Vn toict à brebis*, a ſheep-coat; *un eſtuy à peignes*, a combe-caſe; *terre à froment*, a wheat-field, or ground for wheat. Secondly, an imputation; as, *Imputer à negligence*, to impute to negligence; *tourner à blaſme, à reproche*; to turn to blame, to reproach. Thirdly, wee thereby ſhew the end or iſſue; as, *Reüſſir à heureux effect*, to come to happy effect; *ſucceder à gloire*, to ſucceed gloriouſly; *tomber à honte*, to fall out ſhamefully; *tourner à perte, à dommage, à profit*, to turn to loſſe, to harme, to profit. Fourthly, by *à*, we ſhew the manner how a thing is done; as, *Marcher à pas contez*, to goe telling ones ſteps; *chercher à taſtons*, to ſeeke groping; *aller à reculons*, to go backwards; *aller à cheval*, to go on horſeback; *à pied*, on foot. Fiftly, the faſhion, or ſome notable adjunct to the faſhion of a thing, where *à* ſeems to ſignifie With; as, *Du taffetas à gros grain*, grograine or taffeta with a great graine or wale; *du paſſement à dentelles*, a lace

with needle-work peaks or edging; *un monstre à resveille matin*, a Watch with a larum. 6 Sometime it seems to signifie For; as, *Vn tel est tenu à homme de bien*, such a one is held for an honest man; *à sçavant personnage*, for a man of knowledge; *à preud' homme*, for a good man. *Si je ne vous fais à Senateur, vous ne me serez pas à Consul:* if I be not to you a Senatour, you shall not be to me a Consull. Lastly, it is imployed in many Adverbiall phrases; as, *à tant*, by this, or thereupon; *à tard*, late; *à tort*, wrongfully; *à droit*, by right; *à tors & à travers*, overthwartly; *à peine*, scarcely; *à souhait*, wilnedly; *à point, à propos*, fitly, or in due time; *à escient*, in earnest. This Adjective *Tout* hath afore it the indefinite Articles, when it commeth afore a Substantive with *le* between; as, *Tout le monde*, all the world, every body; *de tout le monde, à tout le monde*. So *Maint, maints, mainte, maintes*, and *plusieurs*, require onely the indefinite articles.

Au, aux, à la, aux and *ès*, are definite Articles; as, *Se presenter au Roy*, to present himselfe to the King; *aller aux champs*, to go into the countrey; *à l'eschole*, to schoole; *S'exercer aux arts liberaux*, or *ès arts*, to exercise himselfe in the liberall sciences; *aux estudes*, or *ès estudes*, in studie; *se promener aux*, or *ès jardins*, to walke in the gardens. These two *aux* and *ès*, when they signifie In the, or within the, are indifferently used; onely herein they differ, *ès* signifies so only, & nothing else:

elſe: but *aux* (being applied to a thing) ſignifies alſo to the, or with the, or at the. Examples of both, *Vertu reſide és cœurs nobles*, vertue is reſident in noble harts: *Dieu a parlé aux prophetes, & és prophetes*, God hath ſpoken to the Prophets, and in the Prophets.

Theſe definite articles are uſed, firſt, to ſhew the inſtrument, wherewith a thing is made or done; as *Duit au marteau*, wrought with the hammer, *à la lime*, with the file; *compaſſé au compas*, compaſſed with the compaſſe; *eſquarri à l'eſquierre*, ſquared out with the ſquire; *dreſſé au niveau*, levelled with the levell, &c. 2. Alſo when wee give a note to a thing, wherby it may be known: as *La lune au teint d'argent*, the ſilver-coloured moone; *François au grand nez*, Francis with the great noſe; *La belle fille aux jaunes cheveux*, the faire maiden with the yellow haire. 3. When in phraſes wherein *Mode*, maner, or faſhion is underſtood, *à la*, is uſed: as *a la Françoiſe*, after the French faſhion; for *à la mode Françoiſe*; *à la matelote*, after the Mariners faſhion, or guiſe, or like a Mariner. 4 To ſhew the poſſeſſion of a thing to the owner: as *Les gands de la*, or *à la Dame de ceans*, the Lady of the houſe her gloves; *Le cheval au Sieur de tel lieu*, the horſe of the Gentleman of ſuch a place. But when the proper name of the poſſeſſor is expreſſed, wee uſe *de* or *à*; as, *Le logis de* or *à Iaques*, Iames his houſe;

le

le laquais de or *à Monsieur*, the lackey of Maister, &c. 5 These Dative Articles, *à, au, à la, à l'*, are employed after the verb *faire*, and verbs of senses, as *sentir, voir*; of permission, as *Laisser, permettre, endurer, souffrir*, and some infinitives of other verbs, when they are put for *par* by; as, *Ie vous feray payer à mon maistre*, I will cause you to be paid by my maister. *Ie vous feray tancer à Madame*, I will make my Lady chide you. *I' ay veu bastir aux maçons ce logis*, I saw this house builded by the masons. *Ie vous ay ouy appeller à vostre maistre*, I have heard you called by your maister. *Ie feray nettoyer vos bottes au valet de ceans*, I will cause your boots to be made clean by the servant of the house.

The Definite articles are used afore *Sire*, speaking of the King; as, *le Roy nostre Sire*, the King our Lord, *du Roy nostre Sire, au Roy nostre sire*: or speaking of some notable Marchant; as, *Le sire Iosse envoye de Marchandise au sire Martin, qu'il avoit acheté du Sire Leonard*, Maister Iosse sendeth wares to maister Martin, which he had bought of maister Leonard.

2. *Of Nounes.*

THe Adjectives, which are set after their Substantives are, 1. of Colour, as, *Paroye blanchie*, a whited Wall; *prez verds*, greene Medowes; *Robe purpurine*, a purple robe; so *pain blanc*, white bread, *pain bis*, browne bread; *vin clairet*, claret

claret wine, *vin blanc*, white wine: 2. Of Elementarie qualities, ſuch as *Chaud* hott, *froid* cold, *ſec* drie, *humide* moiſt, *moite* wet, *aride* drie, *tiede* lukewarme; as *terre ſeiche* a drie ground, *temps pluvieux* raynie weather, *viande froide* cold meat. 3. Participles paſſive; as *Chemin batu* a beaten way, *un livre clos* a booke ſhut, *huis ouvert*, a dore open, *chambre garnie & tapiſſée*, a chamber furniſhed and hung. 4. Adjectives belonging to a Citie or Nation; as *La langue françoiſe*, the French tongue, *la mode Italienne*, the Italian faſhion. 5. Two Adjectives to one Subſtantive are both ſet after; *La femme vertueuſe & ſage*, the wiſe and vertuous woman. 6. Some others there be, of which no certaine rule can be given, but muſt be learned by uſe; as *Le bien & repos public*, the publike weale and reſt, *un arbre fruitier*, a fruit-tree, *une terre labourable*, an arable land; *une foreſt fueillée*, a leavie forreſt. Contrariwiſe, Adjectives of qualitie, quantitie, praiſe or diſpraiſe, are ſet before their ſubſtantives; as *Groſſe teſte & prim col, eſt le commencement d'un fol*, a great head and ſlender neck, are the tokens of a foole. *Le vray ami eſt cogneu au beſoing*, the true friend is knowne in need; *vertueuſe Dame*, a vertuous Lady; *bon cheval*, a good horſe, *bonne eſpee* a good ſword, *beau manteau*, a faire cloake, *belle maiſon* a faire houſe, *un ſçavant homme*, a skilfull man; *vaillant Capitaine*, a valiant Captaine, *un mauvais ouvrier*, a naughtie workeman;

man; *ſotte opinion*, a fooliſh opinion. Secondly, all the cardinall numbers, are ſet before; as *cent eſcus*, an hundred crownes, *aagé de vingt ans*, twentie yeares old. Thirdly, theſe words, *Pluſieurs, maint, tout, quelque, chaſque*; as *Toute puiſſance*, all power, *pluſieurs choſes* many things, *&c.*

Sometimes, the ſubſtantive is not expreſſed, and the Adjective retaineth the gender of the ſubſtantive underſtood; as *Il vit à la françoiſe*, he liveth after the French faſhion; where *mode* is underſtood: *Donnez reſponce à la preſente*, give an anſwer to this Letter, where *Lettre* is underſtood.

Comparatives, when the compariſon is made betweene many, have theſe articles, or prepoſitions after them, *De, du, de la, d'entre, ès, de l', des*; as *le plus vaillant de tous*, the moſt valiant of all; *le plus modeſte de la compagnie*, the moſt modeſt of the companie; *Ciceron le plus eloquent des Romains*, Cicero the moſt eloquent of the Romanes; *Le plus Docte d'entre les Philoſophes*, the moſt learned among the Philoſophers. By which examples you ſee, the French in comparing uſe the comparative, where the Latines and Engliſh, the ſuperlative. Yet note that ſometimes, when the comparative requireth a verb after it, there is added alſo ſome relative, as *qui, que, lequel, dont*, &c. as, *il eſt le plus vaillant homme que je connoiſſe*, he is the valianteſt man I know. *Voila la plus grande*

merveille

merveille dont j'ay jamais ouy parler, there is the greateſt wonder that ever I heard ſpeake of, *&c.* Marke alſo theſe phraſes, *C'eſt celuy qui me plaiſt le plus*, it is he that pleaſeth me moſt; *L'homme auquel je me fie le plus*, the man in whom I put moſt confidence; or *de qui je me defie le plus*, whom I diſtruſt moſt.

But when the compariſon is made betweene two, then the conjunction *Que*, and ſometime *de*, (engliſhed, than) is uſed; as *Ciceron eſtoit plus eloquent que Hortenſius*, Cicero was more eloquent than Hortenſius; *Plus coüard qu'un Liévre*, more cowardly than a Hare. *La face n'eſt plus grande de demi pied*, the face is no greater than halfe a foot. *Ie voudrois apprendre d'un plus ſage que moy*, I would learne of one more wiſe than my ſelfe.

And here note well, that if the ſpeach require a verb after the conjunction *Que*, than, you muſt ſet *Ne* betweene the ſaid *que* and the verbe; as, *Vn tel eſt plus ſçavant qu'il ne paroiſt de prime face*, ſuch a one is more skilfull than hee makes ſhew to be at firſt ſight. *Vous avez mieux appris icy que vous n'euſſiez fait ailleurs*, you have learned better here, than you had done in another place. *Il parle autrement enhuy qu'il ne faiſoit hier*, hee ſpeakes otherwiſe to day, than hee did yeſterday. *Ie l'ay trouvé autre que je ne l'avois eſtimé*, I have found him another manner of man than I thought to have done. In which two laſt examples, you ſee

Autre

Autre and *autrement*, uſed in the ſame manner with *que* and *ne*, as the former.

The French ſuperlative is onely uſed adjectively; as *Achilles a eſté treſvaillant*, Achilles hath beene moſt valiant; *Ciceron treſeloquent*, Cicero moſt eloquent.

3. *Of Pronounes.*

THe nominative caſes of pronounes are ſometimes ſet immediatly after the verbe, as *Feray-je mal afin que bien en vienne?* ſhall I doe evill, that good may come thereof? *Crois-tu aux Prophetes?* beleeveſt thou the Prophets? *viendrez-vous avec nous?* will you come with us? 2. In phraſes (as it were) corrective, or having *Ce* afore it; *Di-je*, ſay I, *veux-je*, will I, *ce penſe-je* as I thinke, *ce croy-je* as I beleeve, *ce dit on* as they ſay, which make a ſhort parentheſis, as *C'eſt vous, ce diſent-ils, qu'ils cherchent*, it is you (as they ſay) whom they ſeeke; *Le Turc, ce dit-on, met ſus une puiſſante armée*, the Turke, they ſay, leavieth a mightie armie.

3. In adverſatives, elegantly expreſſed by *Si* for *toutes fois*; as *vous me blamez; ſi fay-je mon devoir*, you blame me, yet I doe my dutie. *Vous faitez du Seigneur, ſi ſçait-on bien qui vous eſtes*, you make your ſelfe a Lord, yet men know well enough who you are. 4. After *Si* and *auſſi* conceſſives; as *Allez toſt ou je vous ay dit: Si feray-je*, or *auſſi feray-je*, goe quickly where I told you: ſo I will. *Pour*

bien

bien aprendre, il faut bien eſtudier: Si faut-il, or *Auſſi faut-il*, for to learne well, one muſt ſtudy well: ſo one muſt. *Ie penſois que Monſieur ſe vouſiſt pourmener: Si veut il*, or *Auſſi veut-il*, or *Si fait-il*, or *Auſſi fait-il*, I thought my Lord would have gone to walke: ſo he will, or ſo he doth. And this is uſed throughout all the tenſes and perſons of the verbes, *Avoir*, *eſtre*, *faire*, *ſaloir* and *vouloir*. 5. In phraſes conceived by the Imperfect tenſe Optative, ſecretly including the adverſative *Though*; as *Ie ne le crain point fuſt-il un Roland*, I feare him not, were he a Rowland, or, though he were as valiant as was Rowland. *Ie ne le croyray-ja, m'en juraſt-il cent fois*, I will not beleeve him, ſhould he ſweare it to me an hundred times: that is, though he ſhould ſweare. 6. When ſome adverb or conjunction, ſuch as *Lors*, *alors*, *adonc*, *tant*, *à tant*, *ſi*, *auſſi*, *donc*, *partant*, *bien*, and the like, begin the phraſe, then may the ſaid nominatives be ſet afore or after the verb; but beſt after, as *un tel eſt fort ſçavant, auſſi a-il pris grand peine*, ſuch a one is very learned, he hath alſo taken great paines; or, indeed he hath taken great paines. *à ce me veux-je oppoſer*, to this I will oppoſe my ſelfe. *Vous m'avez fait une promeſſe, or eſt il temps de l'accomplir*, you made me a promiſe, it is now time to performe it; *or verray-je ſi vous m'eſtes ami*, now ſhall I ſee if you be my friend: *or ſçaura-on quel homme vous eſtes*, now ſhall we know what manner of man you

you are. 7. The conjunction *et*, conjoyning ſome appendix to a precedent ſpeach, makes the ſyllable *on* be ſet after the verb; *voila un honneſte homme, & fait on grand cas de luy*, there is an honeſt man, and much account is made of him. *Le Roy ſe porte bien, & dit on qu'il viendra bien toſt ici*, the King is in good health, and they ſay he will come hither ſhortly. 8. In ſome vehement wiſhes, ſuch as, *Fuſſe-je auſſi heureux que vous*, O that I were ſo happie as you; *à la bonne heure ſoyez vous venu*, In a good houre be you come: ſo *puiſſe-je mourir s'il n'eſt vray: maudit ſoit-il qui a fait ce tort.* 9 Laſtly, in ſpeeches expreſſing difficultie, with *à peine, à grand regret, difficilement, malaiſement, à toute force*; as *vous parlez ſi bas, qu'à peine vous puis-je entendre*, you ſpeake ſo low, that I can hardly heare you; *un tel eſt ſi couſtumier de mentir, que bien envis le croit-on, voire quand il dit vray*, ſuch a one is ſo uſed to lie, that one hath much adoe to beleeve him, yea, when he ſpeakes truth.

Very ſeldome are the perſonall pronounes nominatives omitted; vnleſſe it be, 1. In anſwers by conceſſion or negation, to ſome enunciative ſpeach afore-going; as *vous eſcrivez: ce fay-mon*, you write; t'is true, I doe: or *non fay*, I doe not: *Si faites*, but you doe. 2. When *et*, or *et ſi* coupleth ſome appendix to ſome ſpeach afore-going, wherein the perſon was ſufficiently expreſſed: *vous m'avez bien conſeillé, & vous croyray une autre*

fois

ſa; you have counſelled me well, and I will beleve you another time. *Il vous reſpecte, & ſi vous ſervira bien*, he reſpects you, and ſurely hee will ſerve you well. 3. In the latter clauſe of a ſpeach, after *que*; as *I'ay receu les letres que m'avez envoyees*, I have received the letters you ſent me. *Vous voyez qu'avons ſoin de vous*, you ſee wee have care of you.

Theſe accuſatives and datives, *me, te, ſe, vous, nous, luy, leur*, and *le, la, les*, are ever ſet before their verbe; *Ie le vous ay dit*, I have told it you; *Ie leur eſcriray*, I will write unto them; *reſpectons les gens de bien, car Dieu les aime*, let us reſpect honeſt folke, for God loveth them.

And obſerve here the order: in affirmative ſpeaches, the nominative pronoune begins, then comes one of the foreſaid datives or accuſatives, and then the verb; as in the former examples: and nothing elſe is to be betweene them and the verbe; except *ne*, which goeth betweene the nominative and the ſaid accuſative, or dative, as *Ie ne vous refuſe pas*, I refuſe you not. *Si vous ne me vouliez tenir promeſſe, il ne me la falloit pas faire*, if you were not willing to keepe mee promiſe, you ſhould not have made it to me. Except alſo the relatives *en* and *y*, which are ſet ever immediately before the verb.

From this rule is excepted imperative ſpeaches, wherein the ſaid accuſatives and datives are ſet

after the verb, as *Eſcrivez luy*, write unto him; *baillez moy à boire*, give me ſome drinke. *Servez-moy à mon gré, ou vous en allez*, ſerve mee to my liking, or get you gone. Yet this exception is not without theſe foure limitations: 1. That we uſe not *Me* and *te* after imperatives, but in their ſtead *moy* and *toy*; as *Oſte toy de là*, get thee away from thence. 2 That, if there bee a ſecond imperative Verb joyned to the firſt by ſome conjunction, then in the ſecond, the ſaid accuſative or dative is ſet before; as *Si vous voyez mes amis, ſaluez-les, & leur dites que je me porte bien.* If you ſee my friends, ſalute them, and tell them that I am well. 3. That *Se* is ever ſet before the Verb, as *qu'il ſe ſouvienne de moy*, let him remember mee. 4. That, in prohibitive ſpeaches, or negative imperatives, they are ſet before; as *Ne luy faites point de mal*, doe him no evill; *Ne le dites à perſonne*, tell it to no body; *ne la faſchez point*, anger her not.

If both a Dative and an Accuſative (which is ever one of theſe, *le, la, les,*) come before the verb, for their placing, obſerve theſe rules: 1. If the Datives be *luy*, or *leur*, then they are ſet after the Accuſative; as, *Qui trouvera les gands à Madame, qu'il les luy rende*, he that ſhall finde my Ladies Gloves, let him reſtore them unto her. 2. *Se* Dative is ever ſet afore, and the Accuſative after; as *Ces beaux ornamens-là, Madame ſe les fait faire*, thoſe ſame faire ornaments, my Lady cauſed to bee

be made for her ſelfe. 3. If the Datives be *me*, *te*, *nous*, or *vous*, they may bee placed indifferently, before or after; as *Si vous avez affaire de mes livres, je les vous preſteray*, or *je vous les preſteray*; If you have need of my bookes, I will lend you them, or I will lend them to you. *Ie ne la vous*, or *je ne vous la donneray pas*, I will not give it you. 4. So alſo in imperatiue ſpeaches, the Accuſative firſt followes the verb, then the Dative; (except it be *Se*, which ever goes afore the verb:) as *Sa requeſte eſt juſte, ottroyez-la-luy*, his requeſt is juſt, grant it him. 5. In ſpeaches where are two verbes, and the ſecond an infinitive, you may place indifferently your Pronounes, before one of the two verbs; as *voſtre demande eſt raiſonnable, je vous veux l'ottroyer*, or *je vous la veux ottroyer*. 6. But if the infinitive have before it a prepoſition, your Pronounes muſt be placed betweene the prepoſition and the infinitive; as *Ie deſire de la vous ottroyer*, I deſire to grant it you; *I'ay oublié à les vous envoyer*, I forgot to ſend them to you.

Ce joyned with a ſubſtantive, ſignifieth This; as *Ce livre eſt doctement compoſé*, this book is learnedly compiled; *Cette harangue eſt elegamment tiſſue*, this Oration is eloquently made. 2. *Ce* is alſo ſet afore *qui* and *que*; as *Ie ne croy pas ce que vous dites*, I beleeve not that which you ſay; *Ie feray ce qu'il vous plaira*, I will doe what you pleaſe. 3. *Ce* is often uſed with a verb Subſtantive, and then

commonly ſignifieth It; as *C'eſt la verité*, it is the truth; *c'eſt moy*, it is I, *c'eſt luy* it is he, *c'eſt nous*, it is wee; which may alſo be ſaid; *Ce ſuis-ie*, it is I, *ce ſommes-nous*, it is we; *c'eſt eux*, or *ce ſont eux*, it is they, or them; *C'eſt bien dit*, it is well ſaid; *Ce ſera ſagement parlé*, it will be wiſely ſpoken; *C'a eſté ſubtilement argué*, it hath beene ſubtilly diſputed; *c'euſt eſté prudemment adviſé*, it had beene wiſely adviſed. And in queſtions; *qui eſt-ce?* who is it? *eſt-ce moy?* is it I? *eſt-ce luy?* is it he? *fuſt-ce eux?* was it they? *qu'eſt-ce?* what is it? *quand fut-ce?* when was it? *Où a-c'eſté?* where was it? *Sera-ce nous qui payerons*, ſhall it be us that ſhall pay? or muſt we pay? *eſt-ce vous dont on parle tant?* is it you they ſpeake of ſo much? But ſometimes, afore this verb (eſpecially, when it is not put impersonally) *Ce* ſignifieth This, or theſe; as *Ce fut la cauſe qui l'induiſit*, this was the cauſe that moved him; *Ce ſont de claires & evidentes raiſons*, theſe are cleare and evident reaſons. Laſtly, *Ce* is uſed vulgarly in anſwers, afore the enclitick *Mon*, ſet after the verbes *faire*, *avoir*, *eſtre*, *faloir*, *vouloir*; as *c'eſt mon*, it is indeed; *ce fay-mon* I doe indeed; *ce faut-mon*, it muſt indeed; *ce veux-mon*, I will indeed, *&c.*

Cecy and *cela* may forme a ſpeach, which *Ce* cannot; as *Si vous m'oſtez cecy, je prendray cela*, if you take away this, I will take that. Here *Ce* cannot be uſed. 2. They are uſed with an Adjective

put

put for a Subſtantive; as, *Cela eſt vray*, that is true; *Cecy eſt clair & evident*, this is cleare and manifeſt; *cecy eſt bon*, this is good; *cela eſt beau*, that is faire. 3. They are uſed with a Subſtantive of the Genitive caſe, and the ſame verb; as *Cela eſt de bonne grace*, that hath a good grace; *Cecy eſt de grand travail*, this is of great labour; *Cela ſera de plaiſir*, that will be a pleaſure.

Cetuy hath neither feminine, nor plurall, and may be uſed in abſolute anſwers; as *Qui t'a pouſſé*, who hath thruſt thee? *Luy* he, or *Cetuy* he; not *celuy*. *De ces deux freres, cetuy me plaiſt fort*; of theſe two brethren, this likes me well.

Celuy hath it feminine *celle*, it pluralls *ceulx*, *celles*, and ſerveth for antecedent to the Relatives *qui*, *que*, *lequel*, *dont*; or afore the Articles *de*, *du*, *des*; as *Celuy que vous voyez*, hee which you ſee; *Ceux qui s'enfuyent*, they which runne away; *Celle qui s'en va*, ſhe which goeth her way; *Celuy qui aime Dieu, croit en celuy qu'il a envoyé*, he which loveth God, beleeveth in him whom hee hath ſent. And afore the Articles thus; *Vos accouſtremens d'aujourd'huy vous ſieſent mieux que ceux d'hier*, your apparrell you weare to day, becomes you better than them you had yeſterday; *Ce n'eſt icy mon cheval, c'eſt celuy de mon frere*, this is not my horſe, it is my brothers; *Ils ont mieux aimé la gloire des hommes que celle de Dieu*, they have loved better the glory of men than of God; *Chacun cherche plus ſon*

profit, que celuy du public, every man loveth more his owne profite, than that of the Common-weale.

Mien, tien, ſien, are uſed in anſwer of queſtions, or abſolutely; *à qui eſt ce livre? Mien, tien, ſien*, whoſe booke is this? mine, thine, his. *à qui eſt cette eſpee? miéne, tiéne, ſiéne?* whoſe ſword is this? mine, thine, his. *Vn tel loë un cheval, parce qu'il n'en a point du ſien*; ſuch a one hireth a horſe, becauſe he hath none of his owne. *Vous demandez de bottes à emprunter, ſi j'en avois des miénes, je vous les preſterois*; you aske to borrow boots; if I had of mine owne, I would lend them you. *Si vous n'avez point de cheval, je vous preſteray le mien*; if you have not a horſe, I will lend you mine. *à qui eſt ce livre? mien*, or *il eſt mien*, or *c'eſt le mien*, whoſe is this booke? mine, it is mine, which may alſo be ſaid, *C'eſt mon livre, il eſt à moy. àqui eſt cette plume? miéne, elle eſt miéne, c'eſt la miéne*; and otherwiſe *C'eſt ma plume, elle eſt à moy*. Nevertheleſſe they may be ioyned to ſubſtantives, when any of theſe *un, une, ce, cette, quelque, nul, nulle, aucun, aucune, tel, telle, chaque, chacun, chacune*, come before them; as, *un mien ami m'a convié à ſouper*, a friend of mine hath bid me to ſupper. *Quelques tiens ſages voiſins m'ont advertid'aucuns fols deportmens tiens*, ſome of thy wiſe neighbours, have told me of ſome of thy fooliſh behaviours.

Noſtre, voſtre, and *leur*, are uſed, either conjunctively, as *noſtre force eſt du treſhaut*, our ſtrength is from the moſt high. *Leur cœur eſt faux & leur*

langue

langue pleine de menſonges, their heart is falſe, and their tongue full of lies: And with *un, ce, quelque, &c.* afore; *un noſtre ami*, a friend of ours, *quelque voſtre voiſine*, ſome neighbour of yours; *un leur ami*, a friend of theirs: Or abſolutely, as *à qui eſt ce livre? Noſtre*, ours; *il eſt noſtre*, or *c'eſt le noſtre*, it is ours (which may alſo be ſaid, *c'eſt noſtre livre, il eſt à nous.*) *Mon cheval ſe deult d'un pied, preſtez moy le voſtre*, my horſe is pained of one foot, lend me yours. *à qui eſt ce livre? leur*, theirs, *il eſt leur*, or *c'eſt le leur*, it is theirs: or otherwiſe *c'eſt à eux. Les hommes font moins de cas de la perte d'autruy que de la leur*, men make leſſe reckoning of anothers loſſe, then of their owne.

And note that if the Subſtantive, ſignifying the thing poſſeſſed be ſingular, ſo muſt theſe be; if plurall, ſo muſt they; as *vos habits reſemblent les noſtres*, your apparell is like to ours; *Il n'eſt pas vray pere de famille qui n'a ſoin des ſiens*, hee is not a trûe father of a familie, that hath not care of his owne. *Les bons rois aiment leurs ſujets*, good kings love their ſubiects. *Des miénes, des tiénes, des ſiénes, des noſtres, des voſtres, des leurs*, are uſed ſometimes without Subſtantives, which are underſtood by an emphaticall ecliplis, *viz. des folies* follies, *des fredaines*, knaviſh pranks, *des bravades*, bravadoes, or ſome ſuch like; as *Quand vous m'aurez bien fait endurer des voſtres, je pourrois bien faire des miénes*, when you have made me enough

endure your fooliſh pranks, I may wel play mine.

Iceluy, icelle, iceux, icelles, are meere Relatives; having reference onely to ſome antecedent, and cannot begin a ſentence: *Embraſſez les promeſſes de Dieu, & vous confiez en icelles*, embrace the promiſes of God, and truſt yee in them. *Dieu eſt mon roc, & je m'appuyeray ſur iceluy*, God is my rocke, and I will reſt my ſelfe upon him.

Qui is either a Relative or interogative: when it is a relative, it hath often *ce, celuy, ceux*, or *celles*, for Antecedents; as *Celuy qui aime Dieu, &c.* hee which loveth God, &c. *Ceux qui ſont nos voiſins, nous meſpriſent*, they which are our neighbours deſpiſe us; or ſome other Antecedent, as *Noſtre Pere qui es es cieux*, Our Father which art in heaven; or beginning a ſentence, *Qui eſt content eſt riche*, he which is content is rich; or without an antecedent, and then it ſignifieth who or whom, as *Ie ſçay bien qu'ils ſont*, I know well who they are. *Conſiderez de qui on parle & à qui*, conſider of whom they ſpeake, and to whom. So when it is an Interrogative, it is who, or whom; as *qui eſtez vous?* who are you? *qui cherchez vous*, whom ſeeke you? *de qui tenez vous ces nouvelles?* of whom have yee theſe newes?

Que, beeing a meere Relative, is the Accuſative caſe of *qui*, as *C'eſt Dieu que j'aime*, it is God whom I love. *Vous ſçavez aſſez ce que je deſire*, you know well enough what I deſire; that is, what thing

thing; and ſo it ſignifieth being an Interogative, as *Qu'eſt-ce?* what is it? *qu'y a-il?* what is the matter? *que demandez-vous?* what do you aske for?

Que, is alſo the conjunction, *That*.

Lequel, being a Relative, is the ſame as *qui*; as *C'eſt Dieu qui*, or *lequel m'a aſſiſté*, it is God who or which hath aſſiſted me. But when it is an Interrogative, it is as the Latine *uter*; as *lequel de ces livres eſt le voſtre?* which of theſe bookes is yours? *Laquelle de ces deux eſpees vous plaiſt le plus?* which, or whether of theſe two Swords doth like you beſt?

Quel is ever joyned with ſome Subſtantive; as *quelle perſonne vous pourroit endurer?* what perſon could endure you? *Ie ne ſçay quel reſpect me tient que je ne vous dechaſſe*, I know not what reſpect with-holdeth mee, that I chaſe you not hence.

Quoy ſometimes is uſed abſolutely, with a participle; as *Quoy entendu*, which thing underſtood, or heard; *quoy fait*, which thing being done; *quoy ayant recité*, which having rehearſed: for this we may alſo ſay, *ce qu'entendu, ce que fait, ce qu'ayant recité.* 2. It is uſed alſo for an interrogative, *Ie vous veux dire quelque choſe: quoy?* I will ſay ſomething to you, what? *& quoy?* and what? *Dequoy avez vous beſoing?* what have you need of? *à quoy eſt bon ceci?* what is this good for? 3. It is uſed at end of a ſentence; as *Ie ne diray*

pas

pas quoy, I will not ſay what; *Il cherche, je ne ſçay quoy*, he ſeeketh I know not what. 4. It is ſometime uſed in admiration; as *Quoy! vous voulez vous perdre?* What! will you undoe your ſelfe? 5. It is ſometime referred to ſome Antecedent, as *voila l'homme de quoy je vous ay parlé*, there is the man whom I ſpake to you of; *C'eſt la fleuve dequoy il eſt fait mention*, it is the River of which mention is made; *le but à quoy je viſe*, the end I aime at. 6. *Dequoy* ſometimes emphatically betokeneth goods, ſubject or matter; as *Cet homme à bien dequoy*, this man hath wherewithall, *Vous me remercie, mais il n'y a pas dequoy*; you thanke me, but there is no cauſe why, or there is nothing for what you ſhould doe it.

Quelque is a meere Adjective, requiring a Subſtantive; *quelque homme*, ſome man, *quelque femme*, ſome woman, *quelque bien*, ſome good.

Quelcun, or *quelqu'un*, is a Subſtantive; *Quelcun vous demande*, ſome body asketh for you; *quelcun de mes amis*, ſome one of my friends,

Que is applied after *qui*, *quel*, *quelle*, *quelque* and *quoy*; as *Ie ſuis preſt d'obeir à vos commandemens quels qu'ils ſoyent*: I am ready to obey your commandements, whatſoever they be, or *quels ſoyent-ils*; or *quels qu'il puiſſent, eſtre*, or *quels puiſſent-ils eſtre*, whatſoever they may be; *Il faut ſe contenter chacun de ſa condition quelle qu'elle ſoit*, or *quelle ſoit elle*, each man muſt be content with his condition

dition whatſoever it be; or *quelle qu'elle puiſſe eſtre*, or *quelle puiſſe-elle eſtre*, whatſoever it may be: *Il n'eſt pas licite de murmurer en affliction, quelle-que Dieu l'envoye*, it is not lawfull to murmure in affliction, whatſoever, or howſoever God ſend it; or *quelle que Dieu la vueille envoyer*, howſoever it pleaſe God to ſend it. *Ie ne vous crain, qui-que vous ſoyez*, I feare you not whoſoever you be; *qui que puiſſiez eſtre*, or *qui puiſſiez vous eſtre*, whoſoever you may be. *Ie ne vous crain point, quelque grand que vous ſoyez*, I feare you not how great ſoever you be; *I'obeiray à vos commandemens quelques difficiles qu'ils ſoyent*, I will obey your commandements how difficult ſoever they be; Which phraſe may alſo be thus elegantly ſaid; *I'obeiray à vos commandemens pour difficiles qu'ils ſoyent: Ie me contente de ma condition quelque petite qu'elle ſoit*, or *pour petite qu'elle ſoit*, I am content with my condition, how meane ſoever it be: *L'homme ſage ne ſe deſconforte point pour calamité*, or *quelque calamité qui luy adviéne*, a wiſe man is not diſcomforted for any calamitie that, or, what calamitie ſoever doth happen unto him. So *quoy-que vous me faciez*, what thing ſoever you doe to mee; *quoy que ce ſoit*, whatſoever, or howſoever it be; *quoy qu'il y ait*, whatſoever there be. Sometimes, *quoy-que* is put for *combien que*, although; as *quoy-que j'e ſoye pauvre, toutes-fois j'ayme l'honneur*, though I be poore, yet I love my credite.

Aucun

Aucun is thus uſed; *Ie ne connoy aucun de cette ville*, I know not any of this citie; *avez vous accointance aucune avec cet homme?* have you any acquaintance at all with that man? *Ie doute ſi je trouveray aucun qui me face faveur*, I doubt whether I ſhall finde any to ſhew me favour; *On en voyd aucuns qui n'ont que la piaſe*, we ſee ſome of them, which have nothing but a bragging ſhew.

Chaſque, or *chaque*, is an Adjective; *chaſque homme* each man, *chaque femme* each woman. But *Chaſcun*, or *chacune* is a Subſtantive; *Chacun aime ſon plaiſir*, every one loves his pleaſure: yet it is ſometimes found with a Subſtantive, *Chacun homme doit avoir ſa femme, & chacune femme ſon mari*, each man ought to have his wife, and every wife her husband.

Quiconque thus; *quiconque veut vivre ſainement, vive ſobrement*, he that will live healthfully, let him live ſoberly.

Quelconque, thus: *Ie ne voy raiſon quelconque en voſtre dire*, I ſee no reaſon whatſoever in your ſaying.

Nul hath *Ne* with it; *Nul ne vid oncques Dieu*, no man ever ſaw God; *Ie n'ay commis nulle faute*, I have committed no fault.

Autruy is applyed to perſons, being of the common gender and ſingular number onely: *N'offenſez point autruy*, offend not another man; *L'autruy* is applied to their goods; *Pluſieurs ne*

font

font conſcience de ravir l'autruy, many make no conſcience to take away violently another mans goods.

Meſme is an Adjective; as *La meſme cauſe*, the ſame cauſe: Or elſe it is joyned together with other Pronounes; as *moy-meſme*, my ſelfe; *luy-meſme*, himſelfe.

4. Of the particles Relatives, *y*, *en*, and *dont*.

Y is either a Relative or an Adverb of place; as *Va au marché: bien j'y vay*, goe to market: well, I goe thither. *Vous plaiſt-il eſcrire à Orleans? Ouy, j'y eſcriray*, will you write to Orleans? Yes, I will write thither. *Ton maiſtre eſt il au logis? ouy, il y eſt*, or *il n'y eſt pas*, is thy Maſter at home? yes, hee is there, or, he is not there. *Ie vay à Londres pour y ſejourner quelque temps*, I goe to London to ſojourne there a while. *Vous ne me repouſſerez d'icy, car j'y ſuis devant vous*, you ſhall not thruſt mee hence, for I was here before you. *I'y paſſeray*, I will paſſe by that way. Or it is a Relative of the thing, *Prenez garde à vous; bien, j'y prendray garde*, take heed to your ſelfe; I will take heed to it, or thereto. *I'y mettre ordre*, I will take order for it, or therein. *Vous ſçaurez bien toſt la langue françoiſe, ſi vous y prenez bonne peine*, you will ſoone learne the French tongue, if you take good paines in it: *Vous y eſtudiez ſans ceſſe*, you ſtudie therein without ceaſing.

En, when it is not a Propoſition, but is ſet afore verbes,

verbes, is a particle. 1. ſignifying iſſue from a place; *viens-tu de la maiſon? ouy j'en vien*, commeſt thou from home? yes, I come from thence. *Quelles nouvelles de la Cour? on dit que vous en venez*, what newes at Court? they ſay you come from thence. 2. Or it is a Relative of the thing, or of ſome portion, or quantitie of a thing; as *On m'a dit que vous meſdites de moy: ſauf voſtre grace, je n'en meſdi point*; it is told me, that you ſpeake ill of me: no indeed, I ſpeake not ill of you. *Nous jouons à la prime, en voulez vous eſtre?* wee play at Primero, will you make one with us? *Preſtez moy de l'argent, ſi vous en avez*, lend me ſome money, if you have any: *Ie n'en ay point, ſi j'en avois, je vous en preſterois*, I have none, or not any, if I had ſome, or any, I would lend it you. *Combien avez vous d'enfans? j'en ay aſſez*, how many children have you? I have enow, or I have enow of them. *I'en ay un*, I have one. *Y-a-il beaucoup d'eſtrangiers en ceſte ville? il y en a peu*, is there many ſtrangers in this citie? there are few: meaning, of them. *Eſtudiez ces preceptes, mettez peine d'en bien uſer*, ſtudy theſe precepts well, take paines to uſe them well. *Ie n'en doute point*, I doubt not of it. *Ie vous en advertiray*, I will advertiſe you thereof. *Il y en a de ſi curieux des affaires d'autruy, que les leurs en demeurent*, there bee ſome ſo curious of other mens affaires, that their owne are neglected thereby. 3. Or it is a Relative of the efficient or materiall

materiall cauſe; *S'eſtant eſchauffé, il en eſt tombé malade*, having over-heated himſelfe, he is fallen ſicke with it. *Il aime tant la chaſſe, qu'il en perd le boire & le manger*, he loveth hunting ſo well, that he loſeth his victuals for it, or thereby. *I'ay amaſſé tous mes materiauz pour en baſtir une maiſon*, I have gathered together all my materials, for to build a houſe withall. *Pluſieurs ſont tellement curieux des affaires d'autruy, qu'ils en oublient les leurs*, many are ſo curious of other mens buſineſſes, that they forget thereby their owne. 4. It is ſet afore verbs of moving, as *Aller, retourner, venir, fuir, enfuir, courir*, with one of theſe *me, te, ſe, nous, vous*; as *Ie m'en vay*, I goe my way. *Il s'en va*, he goeth his way. *Le mal vient à cheval, & s'en retourne à pied*, miſchiefe comes on horſe-backe, and goes away on foot. And if *y* and *en* come both before the verb, *en* is ſet next the verbe; *Ie m'y en vay*, I goe my way thither. 5. After imperatives, both *y* and *en* are ſet; *Il eſt temps d'aller au marché, allez-y, & revenez en bien toſt*, it is time to goe to market, goe thither, and come againe thence quickly. *Allez vous-y-en*, goe your wayes thither. *Tu as beaucoup d'affaires en charge, ſonges-y*, or *prens-en ſoin*, Thou haſt many buſineſſes in charge, thinke on them, or take care of them. *Souvenez-vous-en*, remember it, or them. *Y* with *il* is ſet afore the verb *avoir*, uſed impersonally, as *il y-aura du danger*, there will be ſome danger.

Dont,

Dont is ſometimes put for *duquel*; *Voila l'homme dont eſt queſtion*, there is the man of whom wee ſpeake, or that we ſpeake of, or which is in queſtion. *Vous me parlez de choſes dont je n'ay que faire*, you ſpeake to me of things with which I have nothing to doe, or which I have nothing to doe withall. Sometimes it is put for *d'où*; as *Ie ne ſçay dont cela vient*, I know not whence that commeth.

4. *Of Verbes.*

VErbes have ſometimes their Nominative caſe ſet after them, namely, the ſentence beginning with an Adverb, conjunction, or other undeclinable part; *Si parla le Roy à eux*, ſo the King ſpake unto them. *Lors ſe leva Monſieur le Preſident*, then aroſe up my Lord Preſident. *Soudain s'eſment un grand bruit*, ſuddenly aroſe a great noiſe. *Toſt apres viendrent les Ambaſſadeurs*, ſoone after came the Ambaſſadours.

The verb *Savoir* in many tenſes is uſed for *pouvoir*; as, *Ie ne ſçaurois* is very common for *Ie ne puis*, I cannot.

The verbes *Accuſer*, *blaſmer*, *taxer*, *ſoupçonner*, *atteindre*, *convaincre*, and their contraries *Abſoudre*, *affranchir*, *delivrer*, *excuſer*, *acquiter*, *louer*, *priſer*, and *eſtimer*, governe the perſon in the Accuſative and the vice or vertue in the Genitive: *Ne blaſme point mon maiſtre d'avarice*, blame not my maſter

of

of covetouſneſſe. *Il eſt loué de ſa diligence*, hee is praiſed for his diligence. *Acquittez vous de voſtre promeſſe*, acquit you of your promiſe.

The Verbes *Acheter*, *vendre*, *loër*, *marchander*, *taxer*, *priſer*, *eſtimer*, *evaluer* and the like, governe the thing and it price in the Accuſative caſe; *I'ay acheté mon cheval dix eſcus, & I'ay revendu quinze*, I bought my horſe for ten crownes, and ſold it againe for fifteene. *Cette eſpee me couſte quatre eſcus*, this ſword coſt me foure crownes. *Combien*, or *que faites vous cette ceinture?* how ſell you this girdle? *Combien* or *Que vendez vous cette paire de gands?* how ſell you this paire of gloves? Yet *Avoir* and *bailler* governe the price with the prepoſitions *à*, or *pour*; as *I'ay eu ce chapeau à deux*, or *pour deux eſcus*, I have had this Hat for two crownes. So *Adjuger*, and *livrer*; and ſometime alſo *evaluer* with *à*; *Cet anneau a eſté evalué trente eſcus*, or *à trente eſcus*, this Ring hath beene valued at thirtie crownes. Sometimes are uſed theſe Adverbes; *Cher*, *cherement*, *à bon marché*, *trop*, *peu*, &c. *On vend le vin trop cher à Paris*, they ſell wine too deere at Paris. *Il eſt ici à meilleur marché*, it is here better cheape. *Que vaut le vin en cette ville?* what is wine worth in this Citie? *Dix eſcus le tonneau*, tenne crownes the tunne. *C'eſt trop*, it is too much. *C'eſt bon marché*, it is good cheape.

Verbes of ſeeming require a Genitive caſe, or an Accuſative; *Il fait du fol*, or *le fol*, he playes

the foole. *Faire du malade*, or *le malade*, to faine himſelfe ſicke.

The Verb *Eſtre*, betokening poſſeſſion, requires a Dative caſe; *ce livre eſt à moy*, this booke is mine. *C'eſt à luy*, it is his. *Ce palais eſt au Roy*, this Palace is the Kings.

Reciprocall verbes have before them two Pronounes of one perſon, the firſt Nominative, the other Dative or Accuſative; as *Ie me ſuis esbahi de ce que vous vous eſtes retiré de moy, qui m'eſtois propoſé de me comporter en telle ſorte en voſtre endroit, que vous vous en contenteriez, & nous nous entre-aimerions à jamais*, I mervaile at this, that you have withdrawne your ſelfe from me, who had purpoſed in my ſelfe ſo to behave my ſelfe towards you, as you ſhould be well content withall, and that we ſhould mutually love each other for ever. And theſe have often a paſſive ſenſe; *Si je ne me trompe, vous vous abuſez*; if I be not deceived, you are abuſed, or deceive your ſelfe. And this paſſive ſenſe is exceeding frequent in third perſons ſingular and plurall, by the pronoune *Se*; whereby all paſſive phraſes of the third perſon may bee rendred; *L'ami certain ſe connoiſt au beſoin*, a ſure friend is knowne in need. *Les richeſſes, au temps preſent, ſe priſent plus que la vertu*: riches, in theſe times, are prized more than vertue. *Les bonnes lettres s'acquiérent à grand travail*, learning is acquired with great labour. Theſe phraſes come, when the

the agent is not expreſſed. Sometimes this conſtruction changeth the ſenſe and ſignification of the verb; as *I'aime Dieu*, I love God. *Ie m'aime aux champs, je ne m'aime point à la Cour*, I like well, or I delight to be in the countrie, I like not to be in the Court. *Paſſer*, to paſſe: *Se paſſer de quelque choſe*, to be contented to want ſomething. *Il ſe paſſe à peu de choſe*, he can make ſhift with a ſmall matter; a little ſerves his turne, who is content with a little. *Garder*, to keepe: *Se garder de quelcun*, to take heed of ſome body.

In asking a queſtion by reciprocall verbs, the Accuſative, or Dative is ſet before, and the Nominative after the verb; *Te cacheras-tu?* wilt thou hide thy ſelfe? *Vous tiendrez-vous preſt à me ſecourir?* will you hold you ready to ſuccour mee? *M'attendray-je à voſtre promeſſe?* ſhall I waite upon your promiſe?

Imperatives of reciprocalls in the firſt and ſecond perſons have no Nominative expreſſed, but a Dative or Accuſative after them, reſpecting the perſon to whom the command is made; *Repentez-vous de vos pechez*, repent you of your ſins; *Souvenons-nous de Dieu*, let us remember God. But if another Imperative be annexed to the former by a Copulative, in the latter, the Pronoune is beſt ſet before the verb; *Repentez vous & vous convertiſſez au Seigneur, ou vous aſſeurez de perir mal heureuſment*, repent yee, and turne unto the

Lord, or be aſſured, yee ſhall periſh miſerably.

The third perſon Imperative hath no difficultie; *Qu'il ſe tienne en repos*, let him keepe himſelfe in reſt. *Qu'ils ſe gardent de faillir*, let them take heed of failing.

Impersonalls which have *On*, or *lon* for their ſigne, doe wholly keepe the ſyntax and uſe of the verbes they come of: Example of a verb tranſitive, *On priſe aſſez la vertu, mais on la laiſſe morfondre*, vertue is praiſed enough, but men let it languiſh: Of a reciprocall, *On ſe paſſe bien des richeſſes, pourveu que l'on ſe contente de mediocrité*, we may well be without riches, if we content our ſelves with mediocritie; Of a paſſive, *On n'eſt pas de tous haï, ni de tous aimé*, one is neither hated of all, or beloved of all.

Impersonalls with *il* for ſigne, are conſtrued for the moſt part with a Dative of the perſon, and a Genitive or Ablative of the thing; *Il ennuye à Monſieur de voſtre importunité*, Monſier is greeved with your importunitie. *Il ne luy chaud de voſtre dammage*, he cares not for your dammage. *Il vous couſtera cher de voſtre imprudence*, your want of wit will coſt you deare. 2. With *De* before an infinitive; *Il me deſplaiſt de vous importuner*, it diſpleaſeth me to importune you. 3. With *Que* and a verbe indicative or ſubſtantive; *Vous faſchera-il que je me ſerve de vos livres?* will you be angry that I uſe your bookes? Theſe three wayes, are theſe conſtrued

ſtrued; *Il ennuye, il couſte, il faſche, il deplaiſt, il tarde, il ſoucie, il grieve, il importe, il poiſe, il demange, il cuit, il ſouvient, il ſouffit, il chaud; Que vous chaud-il?* what care you? *Il eſchet, il arrive, il vient bien,* or *mal.* Theſe following of the firſt and third ſort, *Il couſte, il pert, il appert, il apparoiſt, Il y-va;* as *il y-va de la vie,* ones life is in danger, or, it is as much as ones life is worth. *Il y va de voſtre honneur:* or *Il vous y va de l'honneur,* your honour, or credite is like to be loſt. *Qu'y va-il,* what hurt, danger, or loſſe is there in it? *Il me profite d'eſtudier,* or *que j'eſtudie,* it is profitable for mee to ſtudie. So *Il duiſt, il nuiſt, il vient à point,* or *à propos, il ſert, il appertient, il plaiſt, Il faut, il convient, il vaut;* as *il vous vaut mieux eſtre pouvre que larron,* or *il vaut mieux que ſoyez,* &c. it is better for you to be poore than a thiefe; *Il s'enſuit, il reſte, il vous reſte de faire,* or *il reſte que vous faciez voſtre devoir,* it remaineth for you to doe your dutie: *il ſemble, il tient à;* as *Il tient à vous que n'eſtez ſçavant,* it is long of your ſelfe, or the fault, let, or hinderance is in your ſelfe, that you are not learned: *Il ne tiendra pas a moy que ne gaigniez,* there ſhall be no let for me, or hindrance in me, but that you may gaine: And *Il ne me tient pas d'eſtre marié,* I have no deſire to marry; *Il ne leur tiendra plus d'aller à la guerre,* they will have no more will to goe to warre. Some of theſe, and others have a nominatiue after them, which if it bee ſet before it,

would be perſonall; *Il reſte des points d'importance*, there reſteth ſome points of importance; *Des points d'importance reſtent*, ſome points of importance doe reſt: So *Il vient, il regne, il ſurvient, il provient, il couſte, il part, il ſourd, il naiſt, il meurt, il manque, il appert, il apparoiſt, il appartient, il ſort, il court, il chet, il eſchet, il tombe, il croiſt, il eſt, il arrive, il pleut, il greſle, il ſe commet, il ſe fait, il ſe dit, il s'eſcrit, il s'apporte*, &c. *Il pleut, il greſle, il tonne, il eſclaire*, are alſo abſolute. *Il fait*; as *Il fait bon*, it is good; *il fait mauvais*, it is evill, *il fait beau ſe pourmener*, It is faire to walke, or walking; *Il fait dangereux de naviger*, it is dangerous to saile, or sayling; *il fait froid*, it is cold; *il fait chaud* it is hot, *il fait ſec* it is drie, *il fait humide*, it is moiſt, *il fait vent*, it is windy, *il fait jour* it is day, *il fait nuit* it is night, &c. The Impersonall *Il y a* is uſed in three inſtances of quantitie; 1. When the quantitie of a thing is underſtood; as *Combien y a-il de perils en la vie humaine?* how many perils are there in mans life? *y-a-il beaucoup d'argent en voſtre bourſe?* is there much money in your purſe? *Y a-il de la conſtance en vous?* is there any conſtancie in you? 2. When a quantity of time; as *Combien y a-il que vous eſtez en France?* how long have you beene in France? *Il y a trois mois que j'eſtudie en la langue françoiſe:* I have ſtudied three moneths in the French tongue. 3. Space, or diſtance of place, as *y a-il loin d'icy à Paris?* is it farre from hence to Paris?

Paris? *Il y a cinquante lieuës*, it is fiftie leagues. And when theſe matters of quantitie are not expreſſed, it is needfull to ſupply them by the relative *En*; as *Il y en a qui ſont envieux de l'heur d'autruy*, there are ſome which are envious of other mens happineſſe. *Il eſt*; as *il eſt tard*, it is late; *quelle heure eſt il?* what is it a clocke? And ſometimes for *il y a*; and that is onely in quantitie materiall, limited by *peu, beaucoup, aſſez, gueres, plus, moins, tant, autant*, and the like; as *Il eſt*, or *il y a bien du vin cette annee*, there is ſtore of wine this yeare. *Il eſt*, or *il y a trop de faineans par le monde*, there are too many idle perſons in the world. It is uſed alſo in another ſenſe; as *Il me fut hier force de patienter*, I was forced yeſterday to have patience.

5. *The difference and uſe of the tenſes definite and undefinite indicative.*

The imperfect tenſe ſetteth before the minde, an action (though long agoe) whiles the ſame was in doing, and not yet finiſhed; And ſo is uſed, 1. When there was ſome interruption or change of the action, whileſt it was doing, ſo that it was not finiſhed; *Ceſar dreſſoit bien la Rep. Romaine, & alloit bien mettre les affaires en bon ordre, s'il n'euſt eſté aſſaſſiné*, Ceſar reformed well the Romane common-wealth, and proceeded well to ſet the affaires in a good order, if hee had not beene murdred. When we conjoyne two acti-

ons happening both at once and continuing alike, (as before;) *Tandis que vous dormiez, j'eſtudiois*, whileſt you ſlept, I ſtudied: But if the one bee of a ſhort, the other of a long continuance, the ſhort is the perfect, and the long the imperfect; *Lors que j'arrivay à Paris, le Roy y eſtoit.* 3. By reaſon of this continuative ſenſe, it ſerves to declare a cuſtomarie aſſiduitie of Action, ordinary and reiterate; *Eſtant à Paris, j'allois tous les jours me pourmener en la ſale du Palais*, when I was at Paris, I went every day to walke in the Hall of the Palace. *Vn temps fut que vous faiſiez eſtat de moy*, the time was that you made account of me.

The perfect tenſe reſpects onely the act finiſhed, and not the continuance thereof, whileſt it is a doiug; and of this the French hath two, definite and undefinite. The definite inferreth a time long agoe paſt, and an act fully finiſhed, limiting the certaine, fixt, and definite time wherein the thing was done; as *L'an mille cinq cens quatre vingts & dix, le Roy obtint victoire de ſes ennemis, gaigna la bataille d'yvri, & peu de temps apres la ville de Paris ſe mit en ſon obeïſſance*, in the yeare 1590. the King obtained victorie over his enemies, wanne the battaile of Yvri, and a ſhort time after, the Citie of Paris was brought under his obedience. *Nous priſmes il y à deux mois, ſix vaiſſeaux ſur noſtre ennemy*, two moneths agoe wee tooke ſixe ſhips from the enemie. The indefinite ſheweth

alſo

alſo an action finiſhed, but either the time not ſo ended and paſt over, but that there reſts ſome part of the ſame yet to paſſe; or if it bee wholly paſt, yet there is no certaine fixt, and ſet time limited, when the ſaid action was done; Examples of both, 1. *De noſtre ſiecle ſont advenuës choſes memorables*, memorable things have happened in our age. *Cette annee les vignes n'ont gueres rapporté*, this yeare the vines have brought forth but little. *Ces deux derniers mois, j'ay eſtudié en la langue françoiſe*, I have ſtudied theſe two laſt monthes in the French tongue. *à matin j'ay eſté à l'eſgliſe*, I was this morning at Church. *à dix heures j'ay diſné*, I dined at tenne a clocke. And with ſome Adverb of the time preſent, or not long paſt; *Il eſt venu à ceſte heure*, he came now. *Ie me ſuis aujourd'huy trouvé malade*, I felt my ſelfe ſicke to day. 2, *Le Roy a obtenu victoire de ſes ennemis, puis leur a pardonné*, the King hath obtained victorie of his enemies, and after pardoned them. But when the time paſt is ſet downe in generall termes, and without any certaine limitation, or with the Adverbes *Iadis, auparavant, il y a long temps, onques jamais*, and the like, we may indifferently uſe either the definite or indefinite; *Au commencement que je m'appliquay*, or *que je me ſuis appliqué à compoſer cet œuvre*, In the beginning when I applied my ſelfe to compoſe this worke. *Eſtant dernierement à Paris, je vi le Roy*, or *j'ay veu le Roy*, the laſt time I was

at

at Paris I ſaw the King, *&c.* But *au temps paſſé, quelque fois, autrefois, pieça* ſeeme better with the indefinite, and when we limite ſome thing by parts of our age; *En ma jeuneſſe, Durant mon enfance, moy eſtant aagé de vingt ans, j'ay fait, j'ay dit, j'ay eſcrit*, &c. In my youth, during my childhood, I being 20. yeares old, I did, I ſaid, I wrote, *&c.* Yet there is no great difference.

So the Imperfect or perfect are indifferently uſed, when the action done is onely expreſt without reſpect to the time of its continuance; *vous harangeaſtes mieux hier en l'aſſemblee où vous fuſtes, que je ne vous vei onques haranguer*; or *vous haranguiez mieux hier en l'aſſemblee ou vous eſtiez, que je ne vous avois jamais oui faire*, you made your Oration yeſterday in the aſſembly, better than ever I heard you make any.

The redoubled tenſes keepe the ſame lawes, as touching the reſpect of the definite or indefinite time, as their preterperfects, whoſe pluperfects they are.

For brevitie, wee omit the uſe of the Tenſes Optative and Subjunctive, as not ſo difficult as the former.

Theſe verbs *Sçavoir, voir, connoiſtre, affermer, reconnoiſtre, appercevoir, conſiderer, regarder, noter, contempler, ouïr, ſentir, toucher, gouſter, taſter, trouver, ſavourer, entendre, juger, ſe ſouvenir, ramentevoir, reciter, racconter, narrer, maintenir, ſouſtenir* for *tenir*,

and

and other like, which affirme a thing with certainetie, & have *Que* after them, require the Verb following *que*, to be of the Indicative Moode; as *I'ay entendu que vous avez ouï nouvelles de la part de vos amis*, I have heard that you heard newes from your friends. But if the ſpeach be Interrogative, conditionall, or negative, after *que* may bee uſed the Indicative, or Optative indifferently; *Ie ne ſçavois pas que vous eſtiez*, or *fuſſiez de mes parens*, I knew not that you were one of my kinſmen, &c.

Theſe Verbes *Penſer, croire, eſtimer* for *penſer, cuider, tenir, imaginer, douter, ſoupçonner, opiner, avoir opinion, s'eſiouir, eſtre aiſe*, or *joyoux*, or *marri*, or *deſplaiſant, s'ennuyer, s'eſmerveiller, s'esbahir, s'eſtonner*, and the like, ſhewing an emotion of minde betwixt aſſurance and vncertaintie, after *Que*, will have verbes of the Indicative or Optative Moodes indifferently; *Il penſe que lon le craint*, or *craigne*, he thinkes that men feare him. But in ſpeaches negative, conditionall and interrogative, the Optative hath better grace; *Soupçonnez-vous que l'on vous vueille mort?* doe you ſuſpect that they wiſh you dead?

Theſe Verbs, *Commander, enioindre, encharger, conſeiller, ſoigner, ordonner* for *commander, regarder, voir*, and *adviſer* for *prendre garde*; *ſuader, mettre ordre, mettre peine, pourvoir, induire, inſtiguer, avancer, haſter, moyéner, tenir la main, prendre garde, avoir ſoin,*

ſoin, and other like of impulſion or proviſion to a thing; alſo verbes of willing, permiſſion and neceſſitie, and their contraries; as *vouloir*, *deſirer*, *ſouhaiter*, *entendre*, to intend, *ſaloir*, *pourchaſſer*, *requerir*, *demander*, *prier*, *inviter*, *ſemondre*, *accorder*, *permettre*, *ſoufrir*, *endurer*, *tolerer*, *conſentir*, and *deffendre*, *empeſcher*, *prohiber*, *diſſuader*, *détourner*, *démouvoir*, *divertir*, *retarder*, *craindre*, *apprehender* for *craindre*, *abhorrer*, *refuſer*, *nier*, *ignorer*, *differer*, *reculer*, &c. all theſe with *Que* following them, will have after *que* verbes of the Optative mood, imperfect and pluperfect tenſes; *On vous avoit bien conſeillé que vous pouveuſſiez d'heure à vos affaires*, you were counſelled to provide betimes for your affaires. *Vous plaiſt il que je vous tiéne compagnie?* will it pleaſe you that I keepe you company? *I'ignore que vous puiſſiez faire ce dont vous vous vantez*, I know not whether you can doe that which you boaſt of. *Il deſdaigna que je luy aidaſſe*, hee diſdained that I ſhould helpe him.

All theſe Verbes may alſo elegantly have after them a verb of the infinitive Mood, without *que*; as *Ie veux eſtudier* I will ſtudie. *Vous diſirez ſçavoir la langue Françoiſe*, you deſire to have skill in the French tongue. *Ie penſe l'entendre*, I thinke I underſtand it. And this is when the ſaid infinitive concerneth one ſame perſon, as *Ie veux eſcrire des lettres*, I will write Letters; *vous deſirez apprendre*, you deſire to learne. Or elſe, when a perſonall

Pronoune

Pronoune is ſet before the firſt verb; *Ie vous prieray d'aimer la vertu*, I intreat you to love vertue. Of this ſort are the verbes following: *Ie veux, je cuide, je penſe, je croy, j'oſe, je doy, je puis, il faut, je ſçay, j'eſtime, j'imagine, je ſemble, je vay, j'oy, je voy, je ſen, j'apperçoy, je connoy, j'enten* for *j'oy, je remarque, je note, je conſidere, je contemple, je laiſſe, je ſoufre, j'endure, je permets.*

Theſe Verbs require an infinitive with *de* afore it; *Ie crain, j'empeſche, je deffen, prohibe, diſſuade, deſtourne, retarde, deſtourbe, diverti, recule, refuſe, differe, permets*, with a Dative of the perſon; alſo *Ie m'eſjoüis, je me faſche, ennuye, Eſmerveille, Esbahi, eſtonne, ſoucie, laſſe*; alſo *je commande, enjoins, ordonne, ſuade, haſte, inſtigue, éncharge, conſeille, avance, accorde, entrepren*; And *Ie m'atten, vante, diligente, deſpeſche*; and *I'engarde, meus, eſmeus, occaſionne, preſſe, approche, éxcuſe, diſpenſe, il ſuffit, il reſte, il me déplaiſt*, and many other imperſonalls; as *I'ay crain d'importuner mes amis*, I feare to importune my friends, *Vous m'avez empeſché de faire mon profit*, you hinder me from making my profit. *Ie m'eſjouis d'apprendre*, I rejoyce to learne.

Alſo Infinitives have *de* afore them, when they follow Subſtantives or Adjectives expreſſing the moving, or materiall cauſe; as *Soingneux d'eſtudier*, carefull to ſtudie. *Content de faire plaiſir*, content to doe pleaſure. *Las de courir*, weary with running. *enroué de prier*, hoarſe with praying,

envie

envie d'apprendre, deſire of learning. *Loiſir d'eſcrire*, leaſure of writing; and others, where the Latines uſe the Gerund in *di*.

Theſe verbes require an infinitive with *à* afore it; *I'appren, j'appreſte, j'eſtudie, enſeigne, indui, eſmeu, inſtrui, incite, condui, adreſſe, appareille, tends, occupe, embeſongne, redui, atten, prepare, exerce, pourchaſſe, parvien, pouſſe, enten* for *pren garde, pourſui, attente, nui, adonne, incline, panche, amuſe, employe, applicque, acharne, obſtine, opiniaſtre, façonne, accommode, approprie, adextre, habilite, adapte, dedie, deſtine, conſacre, voue, abandonne, expoſe, commence*; *I'appren à parler françois*, I learne to ſpeake French. *Vous appreſtez-vous à partir?* doe you make your ſelfe ready to depart? To conclude, all Verbes and Nownes ſignifying profite or diſprofite, hurting, pleaſure, or belonging to any thing, require an infinitive with *à*; as *diligent à chercher ſon profit*, diligent in ſeeking his profite. *Facile* or *difficile à apprendre*, eaſie or hard to learne. *Plaiſant à ouir*, pleaſant to heare. *Prompt à ſecourir*, readie to ſuccour. And where the Latine uſeth the Gerund in *do*, or the Prepoſition *ad*; *Paſſer le temps à eſtudier*, to paſſe his time in ſtudy. *Prendre plaiſir à jouër*, to take pleaſure in playing. Or when the Latines uſe the Participle in *Dus*; as *une maiſon à loër*, a houſe to let. *Vne fille à marier*, a maiden to be maried. *Ce qui eſt fait n'eſt pas à faire*, that which is done is not to doe. And ſo after *j'ay*,

importing

importing either need; as *Qu'avez vous à faire?* what have you to doe? *j'ay à eſtudier* I have to ſtudy. *à eſcrire* to write: Or command, *Le Capitaine s'eſcria que tous euſſent à le ſuivre, & que nul n'euſt à ſe feindre*, the Captaine cried out that they all ſhould follow him, and that none ſhould ſpare himſelfe: Or the finall cauſe, *Bailler ſes ſouliers à refaire*, to give his ſhooes to be mended; *un livre à relier*, a booke to be bound, *Prendre une terre à labourer*, to take a land to husband, or till. *Vne vigne à marrer*, a Vineyard to dreſſe. *un jardin à façonner*, a Garden to dreſſe.

Some verbes require an infinitive either without a prepoſition, or with *De*; as *je delibere apprendre*, or *d'apprendre*, I purpoſe to learne. *Ie deſire ſçavoir* or *de ſçavoir*, I deſire to know; ſo *I'eſpere, je promets, permets, pretens, I'enten* I intend, *je prie, Souhaite, requier, demande, ſouffre, endure, imagine, aſſeure, pleuvie, garanti, daigne, dédaigne, crain.*

Some, either with *de* or *à*; *I'eſſaye de* or *à faire mon profit*, I trie to make my profit; ſo *Ie m'efforce, eſvertuë, peine, travaille, incommode, taſche, commande, refuſe, recule, differe, ſemonds, invite, convie, pourſui, pourchaſſe, attente, ſolicite, inſtigue, meus, eſmeus, pouſſe*, and *Ie regarde, adviſe, penſe* for *ſoigner*, and *prendre garde*; *I'oblige, j'engage, condamne, congedie, facilite, delecte, esbats, reſjouis.* Other verbes there are which may have infinitives after them all three wayes in one ſenſe; as *Ie contrain, requier, demande,*

demande, ſouhaite, deſire, reſous, delibere, entrepren, j'abhorre, refuſe, deſdaigne, apprehende, meſpriſe, abomine. And ſome, all three wayes in a divers ſenſe; *I'enten parler,* I underſtand or heare ſpeake: *I'enten de parler* I meane of ſpeaking, or I intend to ſpeake: *je m'enten à parler,* I minde to ſpeake, I heare my ſelfe ſpeake. *Ie vien eſcrire,* I come to write. *Ie vien d'eſcrire,* I come from writing: *Ie vien à eſcrire,* I come for to write, &c.

An Infinitive active hath a paſſive ſenſe, when it followeth the verb *Faire*; or theſe verbes of ſenſes, *Voir, ouïr, ſentir, entendre, appercevoir, regarder*; alſo *Laiſſer, permettre, endurer, ſouffrir*; as *Ie feray imprimer mon livre,* I will cauſe my booke to be printed. *Ie le vei mettre en priſon,* I ſaw him put in priſon. *Ie vous feray battre,* I will make you be beaten. *I'oy chanter une chanſon,* I heare a ſong ſung.

The verb *Faire* with *Ne* afore it, and *Que* after it, with *de* before an Infinitive, inferreth a thing to be but newly done; *Ie ne fay que d'arriver,* I doe but now arrive; or I am but newly arrived. *Il ne fait que de ſortir,* he doth but now come forth, or he is new gone forth. But in the ſame phraſes, if the Infinitive have not *de* afore it, it importeth a continuance without ceaſing; *Vous ne faites qu'eſtudier,* you doe nothing but ſtudie.

The Infinitive not depending on another verbe, wee uſe to ſignifie a ſudden haſtineſſe of action;

action; *Nous chargeons bruſquement l'ennemi, & luy de reculer, & nous de le pourſuivre*, wee furiouſly charge the enemy, and ſuddenly he flyes backe, & we as ſwiftly purſue him. *Il eſtoit yvre & ſe laiſſe tomber, & chacun de rire*, he was drunken and fell downe, and preſently each man fell alaughing. Where you ſee *Et* and *De* (with a Nominative between) ſet afore that infinitive.

Pour and *à fin de* are ſet afore infinitives to declare the finall cauſe, and in anſwer to a queſtion made by *Pourquoy*, or *à quelle fin*; as *Pourquoy eſtez vous venu en France? pour apprendre la langue*, wherfore came you into France? to learne the language; or *à fin d'apprendre*, that I might learne. *Pourquoy*, or *à quelle fin portez vous l'eſpee? pour*, or *à fin de me deffendre au beſoin*, wherefore, or to what end doe you weare a ſword? for to defend, or that I may defend, or to the end I may defend my ſelfe when need ſhall be.

Infinitives are very often uſed for Nounes ſubſtantives in the ſingular number; *Couchez voſtre dire par eſcrit*, ſet downe your ſaying in writing. *Ne vous arreſtez au parler du monde*, ſtand not upon the ſpeach of the world. *Tout mon pouvoir ne ſçauroit acquiter mon devoir envers vous*, all my power, or all that I can doe, cannot acquit mee of my duty towards you. And ſo with ſome prepoſitions, eſpecially *ſans*, it is expreſſed in Engliſh by the Participle active in *ing*; as *Par bien*

ſervir & loyal eſtre, de ſerviteur on devient maiſtre, by ſerving well and being faithfull, of a ſervant one becomes a maſter. *Vous me haiſſez ſans vous avoir fait deſplaiſir*, you hate me without having done you diſpleaſure: *Sans cultiver & enſemencer, la terre ne produit que ronces & chardons, auſſi ſans endoctriner les eſprits, ils ne foiſonnent qu'en vices*, without tilling and ſowing, the earth bringeth forth but briers and thiſtles, ſo alſo without inſtructing the mindes, they onely fructifie in vices. So with *Pour*; *Il fut decapité pour avoir trahi le chaſteau*, he was beheaded for having betrayed the Caſtle. Alſo with *Trop*; *Trop parler nuit, trop grater cuit*, too much ſcratching cauſeth ſmart, and too much ſpeaking hurteth. Further, the imperfect tenſe infinitive *Avoir* is uſed with the prepoſition *apres* afore it; as *Apres avoir leu vos Lettres*, after I had read your Letters. *Apres avoir conſtamment attendu*, after he had conſtantly waited. *Apres avoir aſſez connu voſtre intention*, after I had ſufficiently knowne your intention.

5. *Of Participles.*

A Participle of the preſent tenſe in *ant*, is joyned to all numbers and perſons of the verbe *Avoir*, ſo ſignifying a continuance of action; as *I'allois racontant mes douleurs*, I went rehearſing my ſorrowes. *Pluſieurs ennemis me vont rongeant*, or *rongeans*; many enemies goe conſuming me.

This

This remayning a meere Participle, is not tied to follow the Gender of the ſubſtantive, but in it Maſculine forme (being of the common gender) ſeemes to goe more fluently: *La roſee tombant du ciel enfeconde la terre*, the dewe falling from heaven makes the earth fruitfull. *Les femmes ſe fardans rendent ſuſpecte leur pudicitè*, women that paint themſelves, make their chaſtitie bee ſuſpected. Yet in the plurall number, it may follow the ſubſtantive; *Les vertus reiglantes la vie humaine ſont bien ſeantes*, the vertues ruling mans life are well beſeeming: which may be ſaid alſo, *Les vertus qui reiglent*, &c. And when this Participle is onely uſed adjectively, it muſt agree with it ſubſtantive; *C'eſt une vertu bien ſeante que la modeſtie*, modeſtie is a well-beſeeming vertue. It is a meere Participle, when it attributes an action, or effect comming from the ſubſtantive: It is meerely an adjective, when it attributes a qualitie adherent.

In like ſort, the participle paſſive, ſerving for an adjective, muſt agree with it ſubſtantive; *Vn royaume diviſé ne ſubſiſtera point, & la cité deſunie ſera deſolee*, a kingdome divided will not ſubſiſt, and a Citie diſunited will be deſolate. Thus alſo with all verbes having *Ie ſuis* for auxiliar. But being joyned to the auxiliare active, to forme the compound tenſes, the uſe is more difficult, and therefore we muſt obſerve theſe rules. 1. In ſpeaking

king by verbes actives tranſitives with an accuſative caſe, if the participle common goe before the accuſative (which is the ſubſtantive upon which it worketh) it is not tied to gender, nor to number, but is pronounced as maſculine ſingular; *I'ay enhui appris une belle leçon*, I have learned to day a faire leſſon. *Vn tel m'adit des nouvelles de noſtre païs*, ſuch a one hath told me ſome newes of our countrie. And the imperſonall compoſed of the particle *On*, and of the verbe active, hath the ſame conſtruction.

2. But if the ſaid Participle comes after his ſubſtantive patient, on which it worketh, and is referred to it by meanes of a Relative or Pronoune accuſative comming betweene, then muſt it agree with it in gender and number; *I'ay reçeu les livres que j'avois achetez*, I have receaved the bookes that I had bought. *Vous ſouvienne de ceſte leçon que vous avez ouïë*, remember this leſſon which you have heard. The ſame alſo when the ſubſtantive is not expreſſed, but underſtood; as ſpeaking to a woman; *Qui vous à conduite venant icy?* who brought you hither when you came? *Il m'y a amenee*, he brought me thither. And here falleth out two obſervations: the firſt, when this participle is not referred, to an accuſative, but to a dative caſe, then it doth not agree with it, but remaineth ſingular, or neuter; as ſpeaking of women, *Ie leur ay obeï de bon cœur*, I have obeyed them

them with a good heart. *Ie leur ay ſervi*, I have ſerved them. *Elles m'ont pleu pour leur vertu & honneſteté*. The ſecond is, that although it be referred to an Accuſative; yet if there follow it ſome infinitive, it may indifferently either agree with it accuſative, or remaine ſingular and maſculine; as *Avez-vous veu la Roine? Ouy, Ie l'ay veu parler*, or *je l'ay veuë parler à Monſieur L'Ambaſſadeur*; ſaw you the Queene? yes, I ſaw her ſpeake to my Lord Embaſſadour. *Avoit-il desja fait ſa harangue? non, mais je la luy ay oui prononcer*, or *je la luy ay ouië prononcer*; had he already done his oration? no, but I heard him pronounce it.

3. When this participle is uſed with the paſſive auxiliare *Ie ſuis*, it muſt (as wee have above noted) agree with it ſubſtantive, nominative (and not accuſative) whether it goe afore or after; as *De noſtre temps ſont advenuës, choſes memorables*, in our time memorable things are come to paſſe. *Les Gaules furent jadis conquiſes par Ceſar*, the Gaules were long agoe conquered by Ceſar. *Rendues que furent les lettres de Ceſar aux Conſuls*, Ceſars letters being delivered to the Conſuls.

4. The auxiliar participles *Ayant, ayans, eſtant, eſtans*, are never uſed in the feminine forme (to ſay *Ayante, eſtante*, &c.) but are ever of the common gender: and ſo *Eſté* varieth not at all; for we never ſay *Eſtee*, nor *Eſtez*.

Our Participles of active termination, are

ſometimes uſed for ſubſtantives maſculine, as *Le Croiſſant*, the halfe Moone. *Le levant* the riſing. *Le couchant* the ſetting. *Le trenchant* the edge. *Le courrant de l'eau*, the running courſe, or ſtreame of the water. *Le pendant d'une eſpee*, a ſword-hanger, &c.

Alſo the Participles paſſive, or preterite, being made feminines, doe oftentimes ſerve for feminine Noune ſubſtantives verballs; as *Allee*, *Arivee*, *Entree*, *Sortie*, *Couvee*, *Iſſuë*, *venë*, *Departië*, *Venuë*, *Saillie*, *Cruë*, *Aſſemblee*, *Priſe*, *Entrepriſe*, *Miſe*, *Entremiſe*, *Montee*, *Devalee*, *Crainte*, *Contrainte*, *Portee*, &c.

The Syntax of Adverbs, Conjunctions, and Prepoſitions.

Tant, and *Autant*, when they import a ſimple quantitie, without compariſon, have *Que* (not *Quant*) for their redditive, and the ſpeach being wholly affirmative, we may uſe them indifferently; as *I'ay receu du Roy tant de faveurs que j'ay voulu*, or *autant de faveurs*, &c. I have receaved from the King ſo many, or as many favours, as I deſired. But if after *Que* the ſpeach bee negative, then muſt *tant* onely, and not *autant* bee uſed, as *I'ay tant receu de biens de Dieu, que je ne les ſçaurois nombrer*, I have receaved ſo many good things from God, that I cannot number them.

Plus and *Moins* have *De* after them; as *Craſſus avoit plus de richeſſe que Caton, mais moins d'honneur*, Craſſus

Craſſus had more riches than Cato, but leſſe honour.

Si and *auſſi* are uſed afore Adjectives and Adverbs, but *Si* more elegantly; and *Tant* and *Autant* alſo afore Subſtantives, but *tant* more elegantly: *Ie ne ſuis ſi riche que vous*, I am not ſo rich as you; *I'ay autant d'honneur en ma vie qu'aucun autre*, I have as much reputation in my life as any other. So *Si beau* ſo faire, *ſi bon* ſo good, *ſi ſagement* ſo wiſely, *ſi promptement* ſo readily: but we may not ſay, *Il eſt ſi mon ami*, or *il a ſi joüé*, but *Il eſt tant mon ami que rien plus*, hee is ſo much my friend, as nothing can be more: *Il a tant joüé à la paume qu'il en eſt malade*, he hath plaid ſo much at Tennis, that he is ſicke of it.

Si doth ſometime (applied to contradict a ſpeach afore-going) ſignifie Yet; *Vous me voulez mal, ſi ne vous fis-je jamais tort*, or *ſi eſt-ce que je ne vous fis jamais tort*, you wiſh me ill, yet I never did you wrong.

Nenni is uſed in anſwer, abſolutely: *voulez vous venir? nenni*, will you come? no.

Non is either ſet afore Nounes, Pronounes, Adverbs and Participles, which are meerely Adjectives; *Ie ſuis ici venu, non afin de paſſer inutilement mon temps, mais pour apprendre*, I am come hither, not to paſſe away my time unprofitably, but for to learne; And it muſt not bee ſet afore verbes, or participles governing a caſe after

them, for then muſt *Ne* be uſed, *Ie ne ſuis pas venu pour perdre le temps*, I am not come for to loſe time. Or abſolutely, or in Negative anſwers made by one of theſe verbes *faire, avoir, eſtre, ſaloir, vouloir*, as *Dites moy voſtre nom : Non feray*, tell me your name, I will not. *Voila voſtre hoſte : non eſt*, here is your hoſt : it is not. *Avez vous eſté à Genes? Non*, have you beene at Geneua? no. It is ſometime alſo uſed with *point*; as *Ie vous donne cela, non point pour m'acquiter des obligations que je vous ay, mais pour teſmoignage du ſouvenir que j'ay de vous*, This I give you, not to acquit me of the bond of kindneſſe that I owe you, but to teſtifie my remembrance of you.

Pas and *Point* doe but fill up a negation, and doe differ very little: *point* agrees beſt to things bearing quantitie, *Ie n'ay point d'argent*, I have no money; *point de puiſſance, point d'eſprit*, no power, no wit; And it often is uſed abſolutely in anſwers. *Pas* ſerveth for a ſimple denying or of qualitie, but never abſolutely as *point*. Theſe two are ſometimes omitted; namely, 1. In conditionall ſpeaches, expreſſed by the Latine *Niſi* afore a verb, *Si je ne vous aimois*. if I did not love you; *Si vous ne m'eſtiez cher, je n'aurois tel ſoin de vous*, if you were not deare unto me, I would not have ſuch a care of you. 2. In ſpeaches, where *Ne* followeth the Relatives *Qui, que, lequel, dont*, in Latine expreſſed by *Quin*, or *qui non*: *Ie ne vi jamais perſonne*,

perſonne, qui ne fuſt bien aiſe d'eſtre louë, I never ſaw any which was not glad to be praiſed; *à qui on ne face plaiſir de le louër*, but tooke a pleaſure to bee commended. *Il n'y a homme qui ne peche*, there is no man but ſinneth, or which ſinneth not. *Il ne fait rien, dont il ne ſe repente*, hee doth nothing but he repents him of it, or which he doth not repent him of, or of which hee doth not repent himſelfe, 3. In asking a queſtion, with *que ne*; as *Que ne faites vous voſtre devoir?* why doe you not your dutie? *Que n'eſtudiez vous?* why doe you not ſtudie? 4. In ſpeaches contayning ſome hindrance, or forewarning againſt inconvenience; as *Sauvez-vous que lon ne vous empoigne*, ſave you, that you be not laid hands on. *Guardez que ne ſoyez deſcouvert*, take heed you be not diſcovered. 5. When we uſe the verb *Sçavoir* for *ponvoir*, as *Ie ne ſçauroy veiller*, I cannot watch. 6. Laſtly, when one of theſe are uſed to fill up the negation, *Rien, jamais, nul, nullement, perſonne, aucun, gueres, onc, quelconque*; as *Ie ne demande rien*, I aske nothing *Ie ne vous connu onc*, I never knew you. *Nul ne peut ſervir à deux maiſtres*, no man can ſerve two maſters. *Il n'a gueres de ſoin*, he hath not much care, or but little care. *Il n'y a perſonne*, there is no body.

Alſo note, that when *Que* commeth afore *Ne*, without *point, pas*, or any of the above-ſaid, then it loſeth its negative force; as *Il eſt plus ſçavant*

que

que ne ſont ſes compagnons, he is more learned than are his fellowes. Or after *Ne*; as *Ie ne connoy que vous en cette ville*, I know none but you in this towne.

Alſo note, that *jamais* (without *Ne*) having *à*, or *pour* afore it, ſignifieth Ever: and that both it and *Rien*, with ſome of the others, may be alſo uſed abſolutely (without *ne*) for negatives; as *Cela eſt moins que rien*, that is leſſe than nothing.

Que ne, and *De peur que* are thus uſed: *Ne faites mal à perſonne que mal ne vous en prenne*, doe evill to no man, that evill come not to you for it; or leſt, *&c.* or *De peur que mal ne vous en adviene*, for feare leſt evill happen unto you. But if wee ſay, *De peur que mal ne vous en prenne pas*, the Engliſh is, For feare leſt evill come not unto you.

Theſe prepoſitions will have Genitive caſes after them with *de, du, des*: *Arriere, aupres, au long, au prix, prés, à l'environ, aux environs, autour, à l'entour, au travers, à travers, à l'eſgard, au regard, à l'encontre, le long, au rebours, aux entours, à rebours, à l'endoit, loing, au loing, au devant, au derriere, au dehors, au dedans, au deſſus, au deſſous, au deça, au delà, vis à vis*, &c.

Theſe *Iuſque, juſques*, and *en eſgard* require a Dative, with *à, au, à l', aux*.

En, being ſet afore a Noune, without an article between, may ſometime ſignifie the Latine *Inſtar*; as *parler en ſage perſonnage*, to ſpeak like a wiſe man.

An

An Index, interpreting ſuch Nounes and Verbes, as are unenglished in the Grammar.

Age, age.
abandoner, to forſake, or give over.
abaiſer, to abaſe, depreſſe.
abbatre, to beate downe.
abbé, an Abbot.
abhorrer, to abhorre.
abborder, to arrive.
abiſme, a bottomleſſe pit.
abnegation, a denyall.
abountir, to waxe ripe, to end, *&c*,
abreger, to ſhorten, or abbreviate.
abſence, abſence.
abſtenir, to abſtaine.
abricot, an Apricocke.
abſouldre, to abſolve.
abſynthe, wormewoode.
accés, or *accez*, an acceſſe, a fit of.
accident, an accident.
accepter, to accept.
accourir, to run unto.
acconſuivre, to overtake.
Accommoder, to accommodate.
accorder, to accord, or agree unto.
accoſter, to drawe neere to.
accroche, a hooke, claſp.
accroſtiche, accroſticke.
accueillir, to entertaine.
accueil, entertainment.
acharner, to fleſh.
acier, ſteele.
acquiter, to acquit.
acquerir, to get, to acquire.
accroire, as *faire accroire*, to make to beleeve, to truſt.
accroiſtre, to encreaſe.
accuſer, to accuſe.
acte, *action*, an action, act.
acre, ſharpe, tarte, eger.
achetter, to buy.
adapter, to fit unto, to adapt.

addreſſer,

Addreſſer, to direct unto.
S'addonner, to give himſelfe unto.
adextrer, to make fitte, quicke.
adjection, an adding to.
adjuger, to adjudge.
admettre, to admit.
Admiral, an Admirall.
admirer, to admire.
adminiſtrer, to adminiſter.
adoption, adoption.
adoucir, to ſweeten, to aſſwage.
Il advient, it happeneth.
adviſer, to adviſe, bethinke.
advancer, to ſet forward, to advance.
adverbe, an adverbe.
adverſité, adverſitie.
adverſaire, an adverſarie.
adultere, F. adultery, an adulterer, *M.*
advocat, an Advocate, a Counſeller. *advocaceau*, a petty advocate.
Affable, affable, curteous
afadir, to make, or grow unſavorie.
affection, affection.
affaire, buſineſſe.
affermir, to make firme, eſtabliſh.
affirmer, to affirme.
affoiblir, to make feeble, to weaken.
affranchir, to make free, to free.
agreer, to bee to ones liking.
agrandir, to make great, or waxe great.
agreſlir, to make ſlender, or to grow ſlender, or ſmall.
ahan, the crie of one that ſore laboureth.
ahanner, to take great paines.
aigre, ſowre, tart.
aimable, amiable, lovely.
aigrir, to ſharpen; exaſperate.
ajeunir, to make young, wax young.

Aigu, ſharpe.
Aigle, an Egle.
aiſe, eaſe; full content, glad.
aide, helpe, aide.
ail, garlicke.
alaicter, to give ſucke to.
alaigre, cheareſull.
alarme, an alarum.
alentir, to relent, ſlacken, be appeaſed.
aleger, to eaſe.
allee, a going, a gate, paſe, allie.
Allemaigne, Germanie.
s'alicter, to goe ſicke to bed, lie bed-rid.
alonger, to lengthen, make long.
alexitere, a preſervative againſt poyſon.
alphabeth, an A.B.C.
amaigrir, to make leane, or to wax leane.
ambre, Amber.
ame, the ſoule.
ambuſcade, an ambuſcado.
ambition, ambition.
Ami, a friend.
amitié, friendſhip.
amender, to amend.
amenuiſer, to leſſen; grow leſſe.
amour, love.
amollir, to ſoften, to mollifie.
amoindrir, to leſſen; wax leſſe.
amoitir, to moiſten: wax moiſt.
amuſer, to amuſe; to put, or to bee in a dump.
Anagramme, an Anagram.
anceſtres, Anceſters.
ancre, an anker.
annaliſte, a Chronicler.
ange, an Angel.
anglois, Engliſh; an Engliſh man.
aneantir, to annihilate, to diſannull, bring to nothing.
angle, a corner, an angle.
anonchalir, to make careleſſe

careleſſe or negligent;or waxe ſo.
Antimoine,antimonie.
Antre, a cave, a denne.
s'annuicter, to waxe night.
antique, ancient antick.
apparence, ſhew appearance.
apetiſſer, to make little.
apauvrir,to make poore, to wax poore.
apeſantir, to make heavie, to wax heavie.
appareiller,to prepare,or make ready.
appartenir, to pertaine, or belong. *Il appartient*,it belongeth.
il Appert, *il apparoiſt*, it appeareth.
il s'Apperçoit, it is perceaved.
il s'apporte, it is brought.
apophthegme,an Apophthegme.
apoſter, to ſuborne.
apoſtre, an Apoſtle.
apoſtolique, Apoſtolicall.
Apoſtume, an Impoſtume.
appliquer, to apply.
apprendre, to learne.
appreſter, to make ready
approcher,to draw neere
approprier, to appropriate.
appuy, a prop.
arbre, a tree.
arbriſſeau, a ſhrub.
architecte, an Architect or overſeer for building.
arbitre,an arbitrer.
archier, an Archer. *Archer*.
archerot, a little Archer
archange,an Archangel
arch'eveſché, an Archbiſhopricke.
arme,a weapon.
arriver, to arrive, come
Il Arrive, there commeth.
arrivee, an arrivall.
artiſte, an Artiſt.
aſne an Aſſe.
aſnon,a little aſſe,aſſ-fole

Aſperges,

Aſperges, ſperage.
aſperger, to ſprinkle.
aſpre, ſharp, tart, harſh.
aſtres, the ſtarres.
aſſemblee, an aſſemblie.
aſſeurer, to aſſure.
aſſoir, *aſſeoir*, to ſet, ſit, ſettle.
aſtraindre, to binde faſt, to conſtraine.
atteindre, to reach unto. to attaine.
atteſter, to affirme, teſtifie.
atheiſte, an atheiſt.
attenter, to attempt.
attendre, to attend, expect, waite for.
Ie m'attend, I truſt to, rely upon.
attraire, to attract, draw to.
attraict, attracted, drawne.
avare, covetous.
aveugle, blinde.
audience, audience.
auditoire, an auditorie.
avancer, ſee *Advancer*.
Avenir, to happen.
aveindre, to draw out, bring forth.
autheur, an author.
aprivoiſer, to tame.
arondir, to make round.
aſprir, to ſharpen, exaſperate.
atiedir, to waxe lukewarme, or to make ſo.
attendrir, to make tender, or to grow tender.
aſſagir, to make wiſe.
aſſecher, to drie up.
avachir, to faile, grow heartleſſe.
augmenter, to encreaſe.
axiome, an Axiome.
ayeul, a grandfather.
Babil, babbling, prattle.
Bail, a gardian.
Bailler, to give.
Baler, to dance.
Balier, to ſweepe.
Bale, a bullet, a ball, a packe.
Balafre, a ſlaſh over the face.

Baiſſer,

Baiſſer, to bow downe, ſtoope.
bande, a ſwathband, fillet, &c.
bander, to binde ſwaddle.
baptiſer, to baptiſe.
baptiſme, baptiſme.
baptiſtere, a Font.
baril, a barell.
bas, low.
baſle, the citie Baſil.
baſque, a Biſcayne.
baſter, to put on packe-ſaddle.
Baſtille, a Fortreſſe.
baſtion, a fortification ſo called.
baſton, a ſtaffe.
baſtonnade. a baſtonading
bave, ſome, ſlaver, drivel.
baulme, or *baume*, balme.
beauté, beautie.
beſoing, need.
beſte, a beaſt.
beſtiole, *beſtelette*, a little beaſt.
beſtail, cattell.
Beſtialiaté, beaſtlineſſe.
beau, *belle*, faire.
benin, *benigne*, gentle, meeke.
beliſtre, a rogue, begger.
bec, the bill of a bird.
benefice, a benefite.
begue, fumbling in ſpeach.
beurre, butter.
bible, the Bible.
biévre, a Beaver.
bigle, *bicle*, ſquint-eyed.
bis, browne, courſe.
birraſque, a tempeſt of whirlewinde at ſea.
biſcaye, a vantage at Tennis.
biſcuit, bisket.
bitume, bitumen.
blanc, white.
blanchet, *blanchelet*, ſomewhat white.
blanchir, to whiten.
blaſme, blame.
blaſmer, to blame.
blaſpheme, blaſphemie.
blaſphemer, to blaſpheme,
bleſme, pale, wanne.

Blondir,

Blondir, to waxe yellow.
boiſſon, drinke.
bonace, *bonaſſe*, a calme.
bon, good.
bonté, goodneſſe.
bord, a welt, hem.
baſquet, a thicket, grove.
borgne, one-eyed.
boucle, a buckle.
bourde, a jeaſt.
bourgeois, a Burgeſſe.
bouger, to ſtirre, budge.
branſler, to totter, ſhake.
branſle, a totter, ſhake, dance.
brave, brave, braggard.
brief, brief, ſhort.
brebis, a ſheepe.
brouiller, to diſorder.
brun, browne.
bruneau, *brunelet*, ſomewhat browne.
brunir, to bee browne, obſcure.
bruſler, to burne.
bruſque, briske, lively, alſo raſh, rude.
bufle, a buffle.
buffet, a court-cupboord.
Buſquer, to ſhift, filch.
Caban, a felt cloake.
cable, a Cable.
cage, a cage.
cane, a Ducke.
cagnot, a little dog.
canal, a channell.
cantique, a ſong.
camerade, a camerade.
camp, a camp.
cameriſte, a chamber-fel-fellow.
cancre, a crab-fiſh.
capriole, a Caper.
caprice, a humour, caprichio.
capricorne, capricorne.
carme, a verſe.
caſque, a Caske, a head-peece.
caſaque, a caſſocke.
catalogue, a Catalogue.
catechiſme, a catechiſme.
cataplaſme, a cataplaſme.
catharre, a Rheume.
cavallot, a little horſe.
caviller, to cavill.
cauſe, a cauſe.
cauſtique, cauſticke.

Cedule, a Cedule.
circle, a circle.
Caille, a quaile.
cerne, circle.
celuy, hee.
ceux, them.
cetuy, this man, he.
cendre, aſhes.
centre, the center of a circle.
chair, fleſh.
celeſte, heavenly.
celebre, famous.
centuple, an hundred fold.
cercueil, a coffin.
certain, certaine.
champs, fields, countrie.
change, change.
chambre, a chamber.
chancre, a canker, cancer.
chanure, hempe.
chapitre, a chapter.
characlere, a character.
chaſte, chaſte.
chaſtité, chaſtitie.
chaſteau, a Caſtle.
chaſtelet, a little caſtle.
Chat, a Cat.
chaton, a young Cat, kittling.
charme, a charme.
chauſſee, a Cauſey.
changer, to change.
charger, to charge, to load.
chanzir, to be muſtie.
il chaut, *chaloir*, to care for.
chef, a head, chiefe.
chemin, the way.
il chet, ſee *cheor*, or *choir*.
cheval, a horſe.
cheveſtre, a halter, a headſtall.
chemiſe, a ſhirt, or ſmock.
chien, a dog.
Chirurgien, a Chirurgian.
chiche, niggard.
choſe, a thing.
cholere, *colere*, choller.
chorde, a cord.
chiquenaude, a fillip.
chifre, a cipher.
choir, to fall: *cheoir*.
chreſme, cream, a criſom.

Chreſtien,

Chreſtien, a Chriſtian.
cichoree, hearb Succorie.
cierge, a big waxe candle.
ciſeaux, a paire of ſizzers.
cime, the top.
cigne, a Swan.
cire, wax.
cimetiere, a Churchyard.
cimeterre, a ſemitar.
ciboire, a Pix.
cidre, Sider.
ciſtre, *ſiſtre*, a braſſe Timbrell.
ciel, heavens.
citron, a Citron.
cieulx, heaven.
ciſterne, a Ceſterne.
circonſtance, circumſtance.
cil, the haire of the eyelidde.
clou, a naile.
clef, a key.
clerc, a Clerke, Clergie man.
clergeon, a pettie clerke.
Cloiſtre, a Cloiſter.
client, a Client.
cliſtere, a Cliſter.
clos, cloſe, cloſed, ſhut.
cloiſon, an hedge, pale, or rayle incloſing.
cœur, a heart.
coife, a Coife.
col, the necke.
coing, a wedge, a quince, alſo a corner or angle.
coffre, a coffer, a Cheſt.
coche, a Coach, a ſow-pig.
colle, glue.
colloque, a conference.
coq, a Cocke.
combatre, to fight.
comble, fulneſſe.
comete, a Comet.
commander, to command.
commencer, to begin.
commerce, Commerce.
compartir, to divide.
commettre, to commit.
complaire, to pleaſe.
comprendre, to comprehend.

Complexion, complexion.
compagnie, companie.
compagnon, a fellow,
compter, to reckon, accompt.
complot, a complot.
comte, an Earle.
cognoiſtre, or *connoiſtre*, to know.
concombre, a Cowcumber.
condamner, to condemn.
congedier, to licence to depart, to give leave to depart.
comté, a Countie, Earledome.
congé, leave.
concierge, a Iaylor.
Il ſe commet, there is committed.
confondre, to confound.
condeſcendre, to condeſcend.
concevoir, to conceave.
condouloir, to condole.
conclave, a conclave, cloſet.
Congre, a Conger fiſh.
conquerir, to conquer.
conſeiller, to counſell.
conſentir, to conſent.
conduire, to conduct.
conjecturer, to gueſſe.
conjecture, conjecture.
conſiderer, to conſider.
conſacrer, to conſecrate.
conſiſtoire, a conſiſtorie.
conſtruire, to build.
conſtant, conſtant.
contagion, infection.
contenir, to containe.
contraindre, to conſtrain.
contempler, to behold.
contreſcarpe, a counterſcarfe.
contraire, contrarie.
contr'oppoſer, to oppoſe againſt.
contrainte, conſtraint.
conventicule, a conventicle.
convenir, to agree with, to meete.
convaincre, to convince.
Il conſte, it is manifeſt.
Il convient, it is meet.

Contredire, to gain-ſay.
Il ſe Controuve, it is invented, imagined, fained.
contrefaire, to counterfeit.
Il ſe Convertit, hee turneth, converteth.
coriandre, Coriander.
corde, a rope, a cord.
coſté, a ſide.
cordonnier, a ſhooe-maker.
corps, a body.
conteſter, to conteſt.
coude, an elbow.
courge, a gourd.
coup, a blow.
cour, a Court.
courroux, anger.
correſpondre, to correſpond, to hold correſpondence.
Il court, there runneth.
convier, to invite.
couvee, a brood.
couteau, a knife.
coutelet, a little knife.
couvertle, a cover.
Coutre, the culter of a Plow.
coulomb, a Dove, Pigeon.
couldre, to ſowe.
coulpe, a fault, guilt.
couvrir, to cover.
courbe, crooked, a bought.
couſin, a couſen.
Il couſte, it coſteth.
crane, the skull.
creſpe, Cipreſſe.
crible, a ſieve.
crime, crime.
craindre, to feare.
crainte, feare.
creſpin, Criſpin, the ſhoomakers ſaint.
croce, a croſier ſtaffe.
croteſque, rude, confuſed worke in painting.
crieur, a crier, brawler.
croche, a hooke.
Il croiſt, there groweth.
crocodile, a Crocodile.
croix, a croſſe.
croire, to beleeve.

Il ſe croit, it is beleeved.
crouler, to ſhake, wag.
crue, *creuë*, growne, growth.
Il ſe cueille, there is gathered.
Il Cuit, it ſmarteth, ſtingeth.
cuivre, Copper.
cuider, to thinke, deeme.
cuillier, a ſpoone.
cueiller, to gather, collect.
cul, the arſe.
curateur, a gardian, tutor.
curieux, curious.
Dangier, danger.
Damaſquiner, to damaske.
dague, a Dagger.
Dannemarc, Denmarke.
debvoir, or *Devoir*, to owe.
debte, debt.
debteur, a debtour.
desbuſquer, to depart, flit, march away.
debatre, to debate.
Decevoir, to deceave.
decliner, to decline.
deces, *decez*, a deceaſe, or departing by death.
delecter, to delight.
delectable, delightfull.
delict, a fault.
defaillir, to faile, faint, decay.
defendre, to defend.
defuir, to flie.
decuire, to decoct.
defaire, to undoe.
deffendre, to forbid.
deduire, to deduct, diſcourſe.
degeler, to thaw.
daigner, to vouchſafe.
dedaigner, to diſdaine.
demangeaiſon, an itch.
demander, to aske.
demandeur, an asker, plaintife.
demordre, to diſtaſte, forgoe hold.
decheoir, to fall downe, from.
demettre, to lay downe, diſmiſſe, give over.

Déloger,

Déloger, desloger, to dislodge.
delivrer, to deliver.
dedier, to Dedicate.
dent, a tooth.
departir, to divide, to depart.
démouvoir, to remove.
departie, a departure.
desastre, a mischance.
desapprendre, to unlearn.
descendre, to descend.
desconfire, to disconfite.
descoudre, to unrip.
descroire, to discredite, not to beleeve.
descroistre, to decrease.
déscrire, to describe.
desconnoistre, *descognoistre*, to unknowe, forget to know.
Il desmange, it itcheth.
desmentir, to give the lie unto, to belie.
despendre, to spend.
desesperer, to despaire, or be out of hope.
desplaire, to displease.
Il desplaist, it displeaseth.
Desdire, to unsay, recant.
desplaisant, displeasant.
desirer, to desire.
se Despescher, to dispatch.
destiner, to destinate.
destourber, to disturbe.
destourner, to turne aside.
destruire, to destroy.
destendre, to unbend, unstretch.
desservir, to take away.
detordre, to writhe.
devenir, to become.
devestir, to uncloathe.
devoir, duty, to owe.
dévoler, to flie downe.
detracteur, a slanderer.
il Deut, it greeveth.
dicter, to dictate.
dict, said, a saying.
diminuër, to diminish.
il se dit, it is said.
differer, to deferre.
discourir, to discourse.
devalee, a descent.
dissoudre, to dissolve.

Distraire, to distract.
se Divertir, to divert, or withdraw himselfe.
divers, divers,
dissentir, to dissent.
dispenser, to dispense.
dissuader, to dissuade.
divertir, to divert.
se Diligenter, to bee diligent, bestir himselfe, hasten.
discret, discreet.
disputer, to dispute,
Dieu God, *Dieux*, plur,
dispos, nimble, active.
Dialogue, a Dialogue.
Diocese, a Diocesse.
doctissime, most learned,
domicile, a house, mansion.
dominer, to governe, rule.
doigt, a finger.
dompter, to tame.
docile, docible, teachable.
dominateur, a Master, Ruler.
donatiste, a Donatist.
Donner, to give.
divorce, Divorcement.
douaire, a Dowr e.
dogue, a Mastiffe.
Docteur, a Doctor.
double, double, twofold.
douceur, sweetnesse, gentlenesse.
douter, to doubt.
douleur, sorrow, griefe.
doux, sweet, gentle.
dragee, sweet meates.
Duc, a Duke.
Duché, a Dukedome.
drap, cloth.
duire, to use, frame, lead to.
il Duit, it helpeth; it is good,
durcir, to harden.
Eau, water.
Edict, an Edict, statute.
edifice, a building.
employer, to employ.
endormir, to sleepe, fall asleepe.
Empereur, an Emperour.
empyreume, a drie heate.
Empire, Empire.

Emplastre,

Emplaſtre, a plaiſter.
enfant, a childe, infant.
enfançon, *enfantelet*, a little childe.
enſuir, to flee away.
encourrir, to incurre.
empeſcher, to hinder.
enfreindre, to infringe.
enclorre, to incloſe.
Il ennuye, it annoyes, grieveth.
Il s'Enſuit, it followeth.
endurer, to endure.
encharger, to give in charge.
enjoindre, to enjoyne.
engarder, to keepe from.
embeſongner, to buſie, imploy.
enſuivre, to enſue.
effect, effect.
effectuer, to effect.
enquerir, to inquire.
embellir, to beautifie.
empirer, to impaire, or make worſe.
enlaider, to make foule.
encherir, to enhance the price, make deare.
Enregiſtrer, to Regiſter.
enſeigner, to teach.
S'Ennuyer, to be grieved, to be wearied, or vexed with.
Entretenir, to entertaine.
entendre, to underſtand.
entreluire, to ſhine betweene, to appeare, give a glimpſe.
entreprendre, to undertake.
entreſuivre, to follow cloſe, or one in necke of another.
entrer, to enter.
entr'ouir, to heare a little.
entr'ouvrir, to halfe open.
Epitaphe, an Epitaph.
eſcamper, to ſcape, runne away.
eſcarbillat, luſtie, frolicke.
eſcarbot, a Beetle.
eſcargot, a ſnaile.
eſcarlatin, of Skarlet.
eſcarlate, Skarlet.

Eſcarpins,

Eſcarpins, pumpes.
eſcabeau, a ſtoole.
eſcarcelle, a powch.
eſcalade, a ſcalado, ſcaling.
eſcarre, a ſcarre.
eſcart, a diſcarding.
eſclair, lightening.
eſclairer, to ſhine, to lighten.
eſclandre, a ſlander.
eſcheoir, to happen, or fall out.
esbatre, to ſport.
s'Esbahir, to wonder.
il Eſclaire, it lighteneth.
il s'Eſclaircit, it cleereth up.
esboüillir, to boyle throughly.
engager, to ingage, pawne, pledge.
eſchaper, to eſcape.
erreur, errour.
eſcient, *à ſon eſcient*, wittingly.
eſchole, a Schoole.
eſclorre, to hatch forth.
Eſcopetterie, a volly of ſhot.
eſcorne, ſhame, diſgrace.
eſcoüade, a Captaines traine.
eſclat, a ſhiver, ſplinter.
eſcouter, to hearken, to heare.
Eſcoſſe, Scotland.
eſcume, ſoame, froth, ſcumme.
eſcu, a crowne in money, a ſhield.
eſcuſſon, a ſcutcheon.
eſconduire, to denie.
eſcorce, a barke of a tree.
eſcrire, to write.
Eſgliſe, a Church.
eſguiſer, to whet.
il s'eſcrit, it is written.
encliner, to incline.
endurcir, to harden.
enorgueillir, to make, or waxe proud.
enforcer, to enforce, ſtrengthen.
engourdir, to benumme.
engroſſir, to greaten, get with childe.

Eſlever,

Eſlever, to lift up, raiſe.
en hardir, to imbolden, hearten.
engraiſſer, to fatten.
emmaigrir, to make lean.
enricher, to enrich.
envenimer, to venome.
envieillir, to waxe old.
eſclaircir, to cleere.
entree, an entrance.
entrepriſe, an enterpriſe.
entremiſe, a mediation, or entermedling betweene parties.
S'Efforeer, to indevour, ſtrive.
eſpais, thicke.
eſtroit, ſtrait, narrow.
eſponge, a Spunge.
eſpingle, a pinne.
eſmail, an enammell.
eſmouvoir, to move, ſtirre up.
eſguiere, an Ewre.
eſmoudre, to grinde.
eſpandre, to ſhedde, to ſpill.
eſpardre, to diſperſe, ſcatter.
Eſprendre, to preſſe, ſqueeze out.
eſpace, a ſpace.
eſpece, a kinde of.
Eſpagne, Spaine.
eſperer, to hope.
eſpoir, *Eſperance*, hope.
eſpouſeter, to bruſh.
eſprit, a ſpirit, minde, wit.
eſpion, a ſpie,
eſquadron, a ſquadron.
eſquiver, to ſhunne, eſchew.
eſquarrir, to ſquare out.
eſquierre, a Carpenters ſquire.
eſquif, a skiffe, a little boate.
eſtudier, to ſtudie.
eſtoile, a ſtarre.
eſtame, worſted.
eſtafier, a foot boy.
eſté, ſummer.
eſtimer, to eſteeme.
eſteindre, to quench.
eſtendre, to extend, ſtretch.

s'Eſtonner,

s'Eſtonner, to bee aſtoniſhed.
eſpaiſſir, to thicken.
eſlargir, to enlarge.
eſtrecir, to ſtraiten, or make narrow.
eſloigner, to put farre away.
eſtage, a ſtorie or loft.
eſlire, to chooſe.
eſtropier, to mayme.
eſtropiat, maimed, lame.
eſtrapade, the ſtrapado.
eſtradiot, a light horſeman.
eſtrade, a ſtreete, highway.
eſtoc, the ſtocke of a tree.
eſtoccade, a ſtoccado, or thruſt.
eſtui, a caſe.
eſventail, a fanne.
eſtoffe, ſtuffe.
eſvannoüir, to vaniſh.
s'eſvertuër, *s'evertuër*, to labour, ſtrive, force himſelfe.
evader, to eſcape.
evaluer, to rate, prize.
Eveſque, a Biſhop.
eveſché, a Biſhopricke.
Eunuque, an Eunuch.
Evangeliſte, an Evangeliſt.
eternel, eternall.
exiés, exceſſe, ryot, ſurfeit.
exclurre, to exclude.
excuſer, to excuſe.
exercer, to exerciſe.
example, an example.
exerciſe, exerciſe.
eviter, to avoide.
exorde, an Exordium.
expedier, to diſpatch.
expedient, an helpe, fit meanes, ſhift.
experience, experience.
exploit, an exploit.
exploicter, to exploit.
extreme, extreame.
expoſer, to expoſe, expound.
s'Eſmerveiller, to marvel.
s'Eſioüir, to rejoyce, bee merrie.
extraire, to extract.
Façon, faſhion.

Facteur, a Factour.
Faict, a deed, fact, done.
fade, unſavory, taſteleſſe.
faire, to make; to doe.
il ſe fait, there is done, made.
Faillir, to faile.
Faim, hunger.
fantaſme, *fantoſme*, a goſt, ſpirit, hobgoblin.
faner, to fade.
faſcher, to anger.
ſe faſcher, to be angrie.
façonner, to faſhion.
facilité, eaſineſſe, facilitie.
faon, a Fawne.
faonner, a Doe to fawne.
facile, eaſie.
faix, a burthen, weight.
faveur, favour.
faulx, a Sithe.
faux, falſe.
fer, Iron.
femme, a woman.
femmette, *femmelette*, a little woman.
felon, fell, fellonious.
ferme, firme.
Fertile, fertile.
feſte, a feaſt, holy day.
feſtin, a banquet, feaſt.
fantaſque, fantaſticall.
fendre, to cleave.
feindre, to faine.
fenaiſon, hay harveſt.
feneſtre, a window.
feu, fire.
feutre, a Felt.
feurre, or *foarre*, ſtraw.
fier, proud; to truſt.
fient, dung.
fiction, a fiction.
fievre, an ague, fever.
fidele, faithfull.
fil, thred.
fils, a ſonne.
fin, end, alſo cunning.
finet, ſomewhat cunning.
finir, to end, to finiſh.
fifre, a Fife.
fiel, gall.
flaſque, a flaske.
flechir, to bend, bow.
fleſtrir, to fade, wither.
flegme, fleame.
fleuve, a river, floud.

flateur,

Flateur, a flatterer.
flatereau, a little flatterer.
flac, a flap, or clap.
foible, weake, feeble.
fol, a foole, or fooliſh.
forme, a forme.
ſe forger, to forge, imagine.
foiſon, ſtore, plentie.
fois, time.
forclurre, as *forclore*.
forfaire, to miſdoe, forfeit.
forclorre, to exclude.
forreſt, a forreſt.
fortraire, to lurch.
fournir, to furniſh.
force, force, ſtrength.
fourbe, a jeſt, wile, deceit.
foy, faith.
foye, the liver.
florir, to flouriſh.
frais, freſh, new.
François, Francis, a frenchman.
franc, free.
friche, untilled, fallow.
frimats, a thicke miſt.
Friſonner, to ſhiver with cold.
friſque, lively, briske.
froid, cold.
froncle, a felon, or uncome.
froidure, coldneſſe, cold weather.
fruict, fruit.
fueillu, leavie, full of leaves.
funebre, Funerall, mourning.
funerailles, Funeralls.
Gabelle, impoſt, cuſtome.
Gage, a gage, pledge, pawne, &c.
galop, a galop.
garder, to keepe.
garbe, a garbe, comelineſſe, grace.
garde, gard, ward, keeping.
gaſche, an Oare.
gaſtadour, a pioner.
gaſpiller, to waſte, laviſh.
garentir, to warrant.
general, generall.
gentil, gentle, prettie.

Gemeau,

Gemeau, a twinne.
geolier, a Gaoler.
genievre, Iuniper.
geſir, to lie in, to lie down
geſtes, geſt: geſts.
gendarme, a man of armes.
germe, a bud, a ſprout.
gendre, a ſonne in law.
genre, kinde.
gent, a nation, a ſtocke.
genouil, a knee.
geler, to freeze.
gingembre, Ginger.
giſant, lying.
giſte, a bed, a couch.
gibier, game of fowle hawked.
gland, an Akorne.
globe, a globe.
glaive, a glave, a ſword.
glu, birdlime.
goinfre, a wag, knaviſh lad.
gorge, the throat.
gouſter, to taſte.
goufre, a gulfe.
gouverneur, a Governour.
Gouverner, to governe.
gracieux, gratious.
grand, great.
gras, fat.
grave, grave.
grace, grace.
grandiſſime, moſt great.
graſſet, *graſſelet*, ſomewhat fat.
graiſlir, or *greſlir*, to wax ſlender, thin, ſmall.
greffe, a graffe.
griffe, a claw, a tallon.
grieuer, to grieve.
greve, ſand, gravell, ſhore.
grief, grievous.
Greguesque, Greekiſh.
grec, gretian, greekiſh.
griller, to broyle.
gris, grey.
gros, groſſe, big, a groat.
groſſir, to grow bigge, groſſe.
grouler, to ſtirre, ſprall.
guariſſon, an healing.
guerir, to heale, to cure.
gueer, to wade.
guerre, warre.

guiſe, guiſe.
guide, a guide.
Harang, an Herring.
Haleine, breath.
haïr, to hate.
hannir, to neigh.
Hardi, bold.
harangue, an Oration.
haſard, hazard.
Hanter, to hante, frequent.
hanap, a cup, a gobblet.
haute, high.
haine, hatred.
hauvre, an Haven.
habitacle, a dwelling place.
haſle, ſunne-burning.
hart, a with, a halter.
haye, a hedge.
habiliter, to enable.
haim, a fiſh-hooke.
hameçon, a little fiſh-hooke.
haſter, to haſten.
hauſſer, to hoiſt, lift on high.
heaulme, an Helmet.
heritier, an heire.
heritage, an inheritance.
herbage, paſture, herbage.
Herce, a harrow.
herboriſte, an herbaliſt.
heure, an houre.
heur, hap, lucke.
heureux, happie.
Hieroſme, Ierome.
hiſtoire, an hiſtorie.
homme, a man.
hommeau, *hommet*,
hommelet, a little man.
homicide, man-ſlaughter.
honneſte, honeſt.
honnir, to ſhame.
honneur, honour.
hongre, a gelding.
hoſte, an hoſt, a gueſt.
horloge, a clocke, a Dial.
huictieſme, the eight.
huile, oyle.
humble, humble.
humeur, humour.
humide, moiſt.
Ialoux, Ielous.
jambe, the legge.
januier, Ianuary.

Iaſpe, a jaſper ſtone.
jaunir, to waxe yellow.
ject, a counter.
jecter, to caſt, to hurle.
jeune, young.
Idole, an Idoll.
jeu, play.
ignare, ignorant.
imaginer, to imagine.
illuſtriſſime, moſt illuſtrious.
image, an image.
imbecille, weake.
Imperatrice, an Empreſſe.
illuſtre, illuſtrious.
improviſte, as *à l'improviſte*, on a ſudden.
impropere, an exprobration, upbraiding.
inconvenient, an inconvenience.
infecter, to infect.
ingredient, ingredient.
inceſte, inceſt.
inimitié, enmitie.
infirme, weake.
ignorer, to bee ignorant.
inciter, to incite.
Incliner, to incline.
incommoder, to incommodate, hinder, trouble.
il Importe, it importeth.
inſtiguer, to provoke.
inſcrire, to inſcribe.
induire, to induce.
inſpirer, to inſpire.
inſtant, inſtant.
intime, inward.
inſtruire, to inſtruct.
inviter, to invite.
joye, joy.
jointure, a joynt.
joly, pretty.
Inveſtiture, an Inveſtiture.
jouer, to play.
Inventeur, an inventer.
joue, the cheeke.
joug, a yoake.
joyau, a lewell.
intervenir, to come betweene.
inclus, included.
joindre, to joyne.
introduire, to bring in.

Il s'invente, there is invented.
Il intervient, there came betweene.
joyeux, joyfull, merrie.
iſſue, the iſſue, end, ſucceſſe.
Italien, an Italian.
juge, a Iudge.
juger, to judge.
jument, a Mare.
jumeau, a twinne.
juilet, the moneth luly.
juriſte, a Lawyer.
juſte, juſt, righteous.
juſtice, juſtice, righteouſneſſe.
juſquiame, henbane.
Laict, milke.
Laine, wooll.
laiſſer, to leave.
lange, a woollen ſwathe.
laqs, a ſnare, a grin.
lanſquenet, a lance Knight.
labeur, labour.
larron, a theefe.
larronneau, a petty theefe.
Largeur, bredth, largeneſſe, wideneſſe.
laſche, ſlack, looſe, faint, cowardly.
laſcher, to ſlacken, let looſe.
ſe laſſer, to be, or waxe weary.
leçon, a leſſon.
leger, light.
legiſte, a Lawyer.
legume, pulſe.
leſte, quicke, lively.
lever, to riſe.
levre, a lippe.
laxive, lie to bucke clothes.
liberalité, liberalitie.
lict, a bed.
licol, a halter, a rope.
lieu, place, roome.
lièvre, a Hare.
libre, free.
lice, a liſts; alſo a bitch.
lierre, Ivie.
limeſtre, a kinde of cloth, whereof hoodes bee made.

Liſible, which may bee read.
limbe, limbo.
limon, ſlime, mud, mire.
linge, linnen.
lion, a Lyon.
liſte, a liſt, roll, catalogue.
litige, ſuit in law, contention.
livrer, to deliver.
long, long.
longueur, length.
loger, to lodge.
loër, *louër*, to hire, rent out.
louable, praiſe-worthy.
louër, to praiſe.
loup, a Wolfe.
louſche, ſquint-eyed, porblinde.
loy, law, the law.
luicter, to wraſtle.
luminaire, a light, lampe.
luſtre, a luſter, gloſſe.
Maiſon, a houſe.
main, the hand.
magie, magicke.
maigre, leane.
Maiſtre, a maſter.
maigue, whay.
maict, a hutch.
maiſonnette, a little houſe.
maintenir, to maintaine.
maint, many.
malade, ſicke.
maladie, ſickneſſe.
malheur, miſhap, misfortune.
manche, a handle, a ſleeve.
manege, the mannage of a horſe.
manquer, to want.
manteau, a cloake.
mantelet, a little cloake.
maquereau, a Pander.
maquerelle, a ſhee baude, a makerell fiſh.
marbre, marble.
marchand, a marchant.
marron, the great cheſtnut.
marri, ſad, ſorie, greeved.
marroquin, Spaniſh leather.

Martyre, martyrdome.
marriſſon, griefe, ſorrow.
marchander, to cheapen, to bargaine, to traficke.
marrer, to dig, labour.
maſſacre, a maſſacre.
maſque, a maske, a vizard.
maſtic, maſticke.
maſtin, a maſtiffe dog.
maſle, a male.
matin, the morning.
mauſade, harſh, lowtiſh, rude.
maudire, to curſe.
mauvais, evill, wicked.
maux, evills.
ſe meſler, to meddle, mingle, intermeddle.
mer, the ſea.
meſtier, an occupation, trade, alſo neede.
meſſager, a meſſenger.
meſure, meaſure.
menſtrual, menſtruous.
meilleur, better.
menu, ſmall, little, thin.
Mercier, a Haberdaſher of ſmall wares.
mercerot, a Pedler.
menteur, a lyar.
melon, a melon, million.
menſonge, a lye.
meſche, a match, a week.
meule, or *meulle*, a milſtone.
merle, a black-bird.
merci, mercie; thanked.
meſcroire, to miſtruſt.
meſdire, to ſpeake evill of.
meſconnoiſtre, to miſtake, not to know, to neglect.
meſfaire, to wrong, miſdoe.
meſprendre, to miſtake.
il meurt, it dyeth.
ſe mettre, to ſet or put himſelfe to it.
meurir, to ripen.
mettre peine, to endeavour, to labour, take paines.
mettre ordre, to take order.

Mignard,

Mignard, a wanton, wanton.
mignardet, *mignardelet*, a little wanton.
miel, honie.
mi-partir, to part or divide into halves.
miſe, expence, layings out.
miracle, a miracle.
mil, the graine Millet.
mignon, a minion, daintie.
miniſtre, a Miniſter.
miſte, neat, ſpruce.
militaire, militarie.
mince, thin, fine, ſlender.
module, a modell.
mol, ſoft.
modeſte, modeſt.
moitié, the halfe, moitie.
moite, moiſt.
moine, a Monke.
moiſſon, harveſt.
moitir, to make moiſt.
moiſir, to mould, bee mouldie.
mollir, to ſoften.
moleſte, troubleſome.
mode, a manner, faſhion.
monde, the world.
monſtre, a monſter; alſo a ſhew, a muſter.
monter, to mount, get up.
morfondre, to take cold.
moreſque, a Moore woman.
morne, ſad, heavy, lumpiſh.
mortifere, mortiferous.
mouiller, to wet.
mouldre, to grinde.
moſquet, a Muſket.
montee, an aſcent.
moſquée, the Turks temple.
mot, a word.
mouſle, a mittaine.
mouchettes, ſnuffers.
moule, a mould.
mort, death.
mouſtache, a muſtachoe.
mouſtarde, muſtard.
mouvoir, to move.
mouſtele, a Weeſell.

moyenner, to bee the meanes of, to effect.
moy-meſme, my ſelfe.
muſle, the ſnout, muzzel.
multiplier, to multiply.
murmure, murmure.
muſc, muske.
muſcles, muſcles.
muſitien, a Muſitian.
myſtere, a myſterie.
Napa, *nappe*, a table-cloth.
naiſtre, to be borne.
narrer, to declare.
naveau, a Navew roote.
navire, a ſhippe.
nef, a ſhip; body of a Church.
il neige, it ſnoweth.
negoce, a buſineſſe.
nepveu, a nephew.
net, cleane, neat.
nez, a noſe.
nicher, to neſtle.
niepce, a Neece.
nier, to denie.
nid, a neaſt.
nettetê, cleanneſſe.
Neuf, new: alſo nine.
niais, a neaſtling.
noirir, to blacke.
noix, a wall-nut.
nourrir, to nouriſh.
noirceur, blackneſſe.
nonnain, a Nunne.
nopces, a mariage, wedding.
novice, a novice.
nourri, nouriſhed.
nourriſſon, a nurſe child.
nourrice, a Nurce.
nourricier, a foſter-father.
noter, to note, to marke.
nouveau, new.
nombre, number.
nud, *nuë*, naked.
nuict, night.
nuire, to hurt.
Obeliſque, an obeliske.
obliger, to oblige, binde.
obmettre, to omit.
obſtacle, an obſtacle.
s'obſtiner, to bee obſtinate.
obole, a halfe penie.
obſeques, funerall rites.
obtenir, to obtaine.

Occaſion, occaſion.
occaſionner, to occaſion.
occuper, to occupie, buſie.
odieux, hatefull, odious.
œil, an eye.
œuf, an egge.
office, office, dutie.
offre, an offer.
offrir, to offer.
oindre, to annoint.
oingnon, an Onion.
ongle, a naile, hoofe claw.
opiner, to give his opinion.
opinion, opinion.
s'opiniaſtrer, to bee opinionate.
opprobre, a reproach.
option, choice.
oratoire, an oratorie.
oraiſon, an oration, prayer.
ordinaire, ordinarie.
oracle, an Oracle.
ordonner, to ordaine,
ordre, order.
orge, barlie.
Orient, the Eaſt.
oſer, to dare.
oſtade, Worſted ſtuffe.
ovale, an Ovall.
ouvrir, to open.
Paiſtre, to feed.
Paix, peace.
Palais, a Palace, the palate.
palomb, a Ring-dove.
pancher, to bend, or leane forwards.
palle, *paſle*, pale.
paon, a Peacocke.
panache, a plume of feathers.
pareil, like: match.
parricide, a parricide.
part, a part.
partir, to divide, to part.
parterre, a floore, a plot.
parcroiſtre, to ripen.
parfaire, to performe.
parvenir, to attaine unto.
paſque, *Paſques*, Eaſter.
paſquil, a poſt in Rome, where libels are fixed.
paſtel, Woade.

Paſtenades, Carots, Parſneps.
paſtorelle, a ſhepheardeſſe.
paſtoureau, a paſtour.
paonner, to play the peacocke.
paſté, a pie, a paſtie.
paſſer, to paſſe.
paſſion, paſſion.
paſmoiſon, a ſwoone.
patient, patient.
patrimoine, a patrimonie.
paume, *paulme*, the palme of the hand; a ball.
pauvre, poore.
ſe Peiner, to take paines, to indevour the utmoſt.
peine, paine, paines.
peage, toll.
peageur, a to'e-gatherer.
peau, the skin, hide.
peigne, a combe.
penſer, to thinke; a thought.
pecore, a ſheepe, ſot.
pedagogue, a ſchoole-maſter.
Peindre, to paint.
pendre, to hang.
pendart, a crack-rope.
paroy, a wall.
pendardeau, a little crack.
penſioniſte, a penſioner.
pepon, a Pompion.
perplex, perplexed.
payement, pa: ment.
peril, danger, perill.
perſiſter, to perſiſt.
perle, a Pearle.
ſe perdre, to deſtroy himſelfe.
ſe Permettre, to ſuffer himſelfe.
permettre, to permit.
pecheur, a ſinner.
piler, to pun, bray, ſtamp.
piller, to pill, poll, rifle.
peſer, to weigh.
peſte, plague, peſtilence.
piſteau, a Peſtle.
pitié, pittie.
pied, a foot.
philoſophe, a Philoſopher.
peſtifere, peſtiferous.
piece, a peece.

Piaffe, a bragging.
pipee, a fowlers chirping to deceive birds.
piege, a ſnare, grinne.
pinacle, a pinacle.
phantaſme, as *Fantaſme*.
phlegme, fleame.
pinette, a kinde of Sider.
pipe, a bird-call.
pilote, a Pilote.
pique, a pike, a pike-man.
pincettes, Pincers.
plein, full.
pleuvir, to plevin, warrant.
plomb, Lead.
playe, a wound.
plage, a ſtrand, or flat ſhore.
pleige, a pledge, a ſuretie.
plaire, to pleaſe.
plomber, to lead.
plaſtre, a plaiſter.
pluye, raine.
poinct, a point, a pricke.
poil, haire.
poëme, a Poeme.
il me Poiſe, it lies heavie on me.
il Pleut, it raineth.
pluſieurs, many.
poix, pitch.
il pert, it appeareth.
poivre, Pepper.
politic, politicke.
populace, the baſer ſort of people.
populaire, the common people.
pore, a pore.
portail, a portall.
porc, a hog, Porke.
porcquet, a Pig, a young porke.
porreau, a Leeke, a wart.
portugaiſe, a Portague.
portefaix, a Porter.
poſtillon, a Poſtillion.
poſtille, a poſtill.
poſte, a Poſte.
poulſer, *pouſſer*, to thruſt, puſh.
pourchaſſer, to procure, purchaſe.
poulpitre, a Pulpit, deske.
poulpe, pulpe.

Poſſible,

Poſſible, poſſible.
pouce, the thumbe.
pourtraire, to purtray.
pourrir, to rot.
pourvoir, to provide.
pourpre, Purple.
pourſuivre, to purſue.
preparer, to prepare.
predire, to foretell.
prelude, a Preludium.
prendre, to take.
precepte, a Precept.
prè, a medow.
precipice, a ſteepe downfall.
prepuce, the fore-skin.
preambule, a Preamble.
preſomption, preſumption.
preſter, to lend.
pleur, a teare,
preſſer, to preſſe.
preſtation, a preſt, alone.
preſtige, a deluſion, deceit.
pretexte, a pretence.
preſcrire, to preſcribe.
pretendre, to pretend.
prevenir, to prevent.
Prier, to pray.
prieur, a Prior.
preſtre, a Prieſt.
Prince, a Prince.
prinſe, a taking. *Priſee*, *idem*.
priviledge, a priviledge.
priſer, to prize, eſteeme.
proche, neere, nigh.
procureur, a Procter.
procurean, a pettie Proctor.
prohiber, to prohibite.
portee, the burthen of the wombe.
prodige, a prodigie.
prodigue, prodigall.
pourfendre, to cleave through.
produire, to produce.
probation, a proofe.
principe, a principle.
priſon, a priſon.
prix, price.
profiter, to profite.
prologue, a Prologue.
project, a project.
proces, a ſute in law.
promettre, to promiſe.

Propos,

Propos, a purpoſe, talke.
proſcrire, to proſcribe.
propre, proper, owne, fit.
proſpere, proſperous.
protecteur, a protectour.
proſne, a publication by the Prieſt.
protocole, copie of a deed.
provenir, to iſſue, come from, or ſpring of.
proverbe, a proverbe.
il Provient, there proceeds.
ſe prouver, to bee proved.
pſalme, a pſalme.
prune, a plumme.
prunelle, the eye ball.
prudent, prudent.
puceau, pucelle, a maid, virgin, maiden.
publicque, publicke.
pudicque, pudic, chaſte.
pupille, a pupill, ward.
puce, a flea.
pulpitre, as *poulpitre*.
putain, a whore.
Rabat, a beater, falling-band.
Rable, a Plaiſterers beater.
rabaiſſer, to abate, abaſe.
raconter, to tell, relate.
rajeunir, to waxe young againe.
raiſon, reaſon.
raifort, a Radiſh roote.
raiſin, a Grape, a Raiſin.
ramentevoir, to remember, to put in minde of.
rancir, to waxe muſtie.
rang, a ranke, row.
rançon, a ranſome.
rare, rare.
ras, ſhaven: Serge ſtuffe.
rate, the ſpleene, milte.
ravaler, to pull downe.
reciter, to rehearſe.
recevoir, to receave.
rebouillir, to boile againe.
raſſeoir, to ſettle, ſit downe.
recheoir, to fall againe.
reclurre, to ſhut up cloſe.

Reconnoiſtre,

Reconnoiſtre, to acknowledge.
recevoir, to receave.
reboncher, to blunt, to ſtop againe.
recevable, receivable.
rebelle, rebellious.
reculer, to recoile, goe backe.
recourir, to reſcue; to have recourſe unto.
recoudre, to ſow over againe.
recuire, to ſeeth againe.
redire, to repeate, ſay againe.
reduire, to reduce.
ſe Ranger, to frame himſelfe to.
ravir, to raviſh, ſnatch away.
reel, recall.
recueil, a collection, entertainment.
redevable, endebted, beholden to.
refuſer, to refuſe.
refuir, to flee backe, flee from.
Refondre, to melt againe.
refaire, to repaire, make againe.
refuge, a refuge.
regime, a regiment, rule.
regne, raigne.
regiſtre, a Regiſter.
regarder, to behold, look on.
il regne, there raigneth.
reſjouir, to rejoyce.
reiterer, to reiterate.
reiſtre, a Reiſter, German horſe-man.
reluire, to ſhine.
remarquer, to marke, obſerve.
remede, to remedie.
renard, a Fox.
renom, renowne, fame.
repartir, to redivide; replie.
requerir, to require, requeſt.
rendre, to render, yeeld.
rependre, to hang up againe.
renclorre, to re-incloſe.
remordre, to bite againe.

Il ſe Rencontre, there occurreth.
remuer, to ſtirre, move.
rencherir, to raiſe the price.
renforcer, to re-inforce.
repos, reſt.
repaire, a lodge, a haunt.
repaiſtre, to feede, give food.
reperdre, to loſe againe.
reprendre, to take backe, to reprove.
reſcrire, to write backe.
reſervir, to ſerve againe.
reſerrer, to cloſe, or ſhut up.
reſsembler, to reſemble.
ſe Reſſentir, to be ſenſible of.
reſpandre, to ſhed, to ſpill.
reſpondre, to anſwer.
il reſte, it remaineth.
reſtrecir, to ſtraiten, reſtraine.
reſtreindre, to reſtraine.
reſpit, a reſpite, delay.
reſtablir, to re-eſtabliſh.
Reſveil, a huntſup, wakening.
reſveiller, to awake.
reſver, to rave, dote, ſpeake idly.
reſverie, raving, dotage.
rets, a net.
retenir, to retaine.
retarder, to hinder.
retordre, to writhe.
retourner, to returne.
revenir, to come againe.
reveſtir, to reinveſt.
revivre, to revive, live againe.
reverdir, to waxe greene againe.
reünir, to reunite.
reverendiſſime, moſt reverend.
riche, rich.
riſque, perill, danger.
ride, a wrinkle.
ris, laughter.
roidir, to ſtiffen, be ſtiffe.
rompre, to breake.
roſtir, to roſte.
rompre, to be broken.
roide, ſtiffe.

Rond,

Rond, round.
Roine, a Queene.
robe, a gowne.
roole, *Roule*, a roule.
rouge, red.
rouget, ſomewhat red.
roux, rediſh.
rouſſir, to make red, wax red.
rougir, to bluſh.
rouë, a wheele.
rouëlle, a little wheele.
Roy, a King.
royaume, a kingdome.
ruë, a ſtreet.
ruëlle, a lane.
rude, rude, rough.
ruble, ſixe hundred pound weight.
ruſe, ſubtiltie, a wile.
ruſtaud, a clowne.
ruſtic, *Ruſtiquo*, ruſtick, clowniſh.
ruſtre, a Roiſter, Ruffin.
Quadruple, *Quatruple*, foure fold, foure double.
quareſme, lent.
quarre, a ſquare.
quantieſme, of what number.
quatrain, a ſtaffe of foure verſes.
queſtion, a queſtion.
Queuë, a tayle.
Sable, ſand; ſable coulor.
ſac, a ſacke.
ſage, wiſe.
ſaillir, to iſſue forth, to leape.
ſalaire, a ſalarie, wages, hire.
ſaigner, to bleed, to let blood.
ſale, foule, filthy.
ſalubre, wholſome.
ſaluer, to ſalute.
ſalut, health, ſafetie, ſalvation.
ſalir, to ſalt; to defile.
ſang, blood.
ſangle, a girth.
ſachet, a little ſacke.
ſanté, health.
ſaoul, full, glutted.
ſatisfaire, to ſatisfie.

Saillie, a ſallie, iſſue, a leape.
ſauce, ſawce.
ſacrifice, ſacrifice.
ſauge, ſage hearbe.
ſavatte, an old ſhooe.
ſauveur, a Saviour.
ſavourer, to ſavour.
ſaye, a ſide coate, a caſſocke.
ſçavant, skilfull, learned.
ſcie, a ſaw.
ſcrupule, a ſcruple.
Sceptre, a Scepter.
ſcience, ſcience, knowledge.
ſec, drie.
ſecourir, to ſuccour.
ſeditieux, ſeditious.
ſeduire, to ſeduce.
ſeel, à ſeale.
ſeigle, Rie corne.
ſemaine, a weeke.
ſepulchre, a Sepulchre.
ſel, ſalt.
ſeicher, to drie.
ſemer, to ſowe ſeed.
il ſe ſeme, there is ſowed, or ſpread abroad.
Septention, the north.
ſeneſtre, ſiniſter, left.
ſequeſtre, he into whoſe hands a thing is ſequeſtred.
ſembler, to ſeeme.
il ſert, it ſerveth.
il Semble, it ſeemeth.
ſereniſſime, moſt famous, a title given to Princes.
ſergent, a Sergeant.
ſergenteau, *ſergentelet*, a pettie Sergeant.
ſemondre, to ſummond.
ſervil, ſervile.
ſerviteur, a ſervant.
ſevere, ſevere.
ſeul, alone.
ſeur, ſure.
ſervice, ſervice.
ſigne, a ſigne, token.
ſignifier, to ſignifie.
ſiniſtre, ſiniſter.
ſirops, ſirrops.
ſimple, ſimple, ſingle.
ſilence, ſilence.
ſinge, an Ape.

Siecle, an age.
Sire, Sir, a title given to the King.
il Sied, it becommeth.
ſoif, thirſt.
ſonde, a plummet to ſound with.
ſonge, a dreame.
ſommaire, a ſummarie.
ſoing, *ſoin*, care.
ſoleil, the Sunne.
ſoigner, to care.
ſommeil, ſleepe.
ſolide, ſolide.
ſobre, ſober.
ſombre, cloſe, darke, clowdie.
ſophiſte, a ſophiſter.
ſoliciter, to ſolicite.
ſonner, to ſound.
ſortir, to iſſue forth, come forth.
ſortie, an iſſue, or going forth.
ſongeard, a dreamer.
ſœur, a ſiſter.
ſot, a ſot, a foole.
ſouci, care.
ſoucier, to afflict with care.
ſe Soucier, to care for.
ſouëf, ſweet.
ſoufrir, to ſuffer.
ſouſle, breath, a blaſt.
ſoufre, *ſouphre*, brimſtone, ſulphure.
ſoulier, a ſhooe.
ſouple, ſupple, pliant.
ſoupçon, ſuſpition.
ſouhaiter, to wiſh.
ſoupçonner, to ſuſpect.
ſource, a Spring.
ſouris, a Mouſe.
il Sourd, there ariſeth.
ſouſcrire, to ſubſcribe.
ſouſtraire, to ſubſtract, or to withdraw.
ſe Souvenir, to remember.
il Souvient, hee remembers.
ſouſtenir, to ſuſtaine, or uphold.
ſubject, ſubject, a ſubject.
ſubmettre, to ſubmit.
ſubſide, helpe; a ſubſidie.

Subſtance,

Subſtance, ſubſtance.
ſubit, ſudden.
ſublime, ſublime, high.
ſubtil, ſubtle.
ſubvenir, to helpe, ſuccour.
ſubvertir, to ſubvert.
ſuccer, to ſucke.
ſuccez, ſucceſſe.
ſterile, barren.
ſpectacle, a ſpectacle.
ſtyle, a ſtile in writing.
ſuäire, a linnen cloth.
ſucre, ſugar.
ſoy-meſme, himſelfe.
ſuader, to perſwade.
il ſouffit, it ſufficeth.
ſuër, to ſweat.
ſueil, a threſhold.
ſuperbe, proud, ſtately.
ſurcroiſtre, to overgrow.
ſurſoir, to ſurceaſe.
ſurſaillir, to leape on, to ſtart.
ſurfaire, to overpriſe.
ſurprendre, to ſurpriſe.
ſurvenir, to happen.
il Survient, there happeneth.
Survaincre, to overcome.
ſurvivre, to ſurvive.
ſuſpect, ſuſpected.
ſuſpendre, to ſuſpend.
ſyllabe, a ſyllable.
ſymbole, a badge, the Creed.
ſyncere, ſincere.
ſynonyme, a ſynonima.
Table, a table.
Tabernacle, a Tabernacle.
tançon, a chiding.
tare, loſſe, unwares, tart, ſalt.
taon, a brizze, a gadflie.
targe, a Target.
il me tarde, I think long.
tarir, to drie up.
taſche, a taske.
taſcher, to endeavour.
taſter, to taſte, feele, grope.
taxer, to taxe, rebuke.
tenailles, pincers, tongs.
tendre, tender.
tenir la main, to have

a hand in.
Temeraire, raſh.
territoire, a Territorie.
tertre, a hillock.
terme, a terme.
terne, a Tray.
temps, time.
terre, earth, ground, land.
teſte, a head.
tempeſte, a tempeſt.
tempeſtif, ſeaſonable.
teſter, to make a Will.
teſtament, a teſtament, Will.
teſton, a boxe with the fiſt, a teſtoone.
teſtonner, to curle haire.
tete, a teat, dug.
texte, a text.
treſjuſte, moſt juſt.
treſchaſte, moſt chaſte.
il tient à, it is long of.
timbre, the creſt of an helmet, a colledge bell.
tine, a ſtand, or tub.
tiltre,, a title.
theatre, a theater.
Throſne, a throne.
tigre, a Tiger.
tolerer, to tolerate.
tome, a Tome.
tonnerre, thunder.
tonne, a tunne.
tonnelle, a tunnell; arbor.
tomber, to fall.
tondre, to ſheare, clip.
il tonne, it thundreth.
il tombe, there falleth.
tordre, to wreathe, writhe.
torcher, to wipe.
tournoy, a Turney.
toux, a cough.
travail, travell, labour.
trahiſon, treaſon.
traict, a dart, ſhaft, ſhot.
traicter, to treate, intreate.
trahir, to betray.
travailler, to labour.
tranſcrire, to copie out.
traduire, to tranſlate.
il ſe traite, there is handled.
trainer, to traile, drag.

Toy-meſme, thy ſelfe.
treſſaillir, to ſtart.
trembler, to tremble.
tremper, to dip, moiſten.
trenche plume, a penknife.
trictrac, the game, Tick-tack.
triſte, ſad, ſorowfull.
triple, threefold, triple.
triomphe, a triumph.
tribu, a tribe.
trophee, a trophie.
trouble, trouble.
trou, a hole.
trouver, to finde.
tuer, to kill.
tumulte, a tumult.
tuteur, a Tutour.
il ſe trouve, there is found.
Vacher, a Cow-heard.
vaſe, a veſſell.
ſe vanter, to vaunt, brag.
il vaut, it is worth.
vendre, to ſell.
veiller, to wake, to watch.
velu, hairie.
Vendange, vintage.
ventre, the belly.
venaiſon, veniſon.
venter, the winde to blow.
venuë, a comming.
verdir, to wax greene.
verme, a worme.
vermiſſeau, a little worm.
verre, a glaſſe.
vertu, vertue.
verité, truth.
vertueux, vertuous.
vermeil, vermillon.
verbe, a verb.
verroüil, a bolt for a dore.
veſtiaire, a Veſtrie.
veſtige, a ſtep, footſtep.
veſtir, to clothe.
veuë, a ſight, the ſight.
vieille, an old woman, old.
vielle, a crowd, a fiddle.
vieil, old.
veuf, a widower.
veuve, a widow.
vice, vice.
veſpre, the evening.

Vieillir, to waxe old.
il vient à bien, it ſucceedeth well, or *mal*, ill.
il vient à point, or *à propos*, it comes fitly, to purpoſe, or in good ſeaſon.
vif, *vive*, lively, alive, quicke.
vigne, a vine.
vil, vile, baſe.
ville, a citie, a walled towne.
vinaigre, vineger.
vingt, twentie.
viril, manly.
viſte, quick, ſwift.
viſtempenard, a duſter made of a Fox taile.
vitupere, blame, diſpraiſe.
vlcere, an vlcer.
voiſin, a neighbour, alſo neighbouring vnto.
vomir, to vomit.
volume, a volume.
il ſe void, there is ſeene.
voix, a voice.
vouër, to vow.
vouge, a hunting ſtaffe, a boare ſpeare.
vouloir, to will.
voye, a way; alſo a courſe.
vray, true.
vtil, profitable.
vuide, emptie, voide.
vulgaire, vulgar, common.
Yeulx, the eyes.
yver, winter.
yvre, drunken.
yvrongne, a drunkard.
Zele, zeale.

FINIS.

Dialogue premier.

De pluſieurs propos & devis familiers, par chemin, &c.

HEnry. *Bon jour monſieur Philippes.*

Phil. *Ha, Dieu vous gard Monſieur Henry, vous ſoyez le bien venu.*

Hen. *Haſtez vous monſieur je vous prie, car ces meſſieurs qui nous doivent accompagner ſont desja preſts.*

Phil. *Garçon, apporte-icy mes bottes & mes eſperons : Ie ſeray tantoſt preſt.*

Hen. *Vous voila maintenant botté & eſperonné.*

Phil. *Les chevaux ont ils bien mangez?*

Servant. *Ie leur ay donné leur ratelier plein de*

The firſt Dialogue.

Of many ſpeeches and familiar talke by the way, &c.

Henry. Good morrow maſter Philip.

Philip. O, God ſave you maſter Henry, you are welcome.

Hen. Make haſt ſir, I pray you: for theſe gentlemen that are to goe with us, are ready already.

Phil. Boy, bring mee my bootes, and my ſpurs, I will bee ready preſently.

Hen. So, now you are booted and ſpurred.

Phil. Have the horſes eaten well?

Le ſerviteur. I gave them their racke full of

foin, & leur mangeoire pleine d'avoine, maintenant il n'y a pas un poil de foin, ni grain d'avoine.

Phil. *Fay-les ſeller & brider; je monteray mon alezan bruſlé, mettez-y une houſſe; monſieur Henry montera le gris pommelé. Et ces autres Meſſieurs, comment ſont ils equippez.*

Hen. *Monſieur le Docteur chevauche une belle hacquenee, monſieur Samuel un cheval de louäge, bien maigre, & monſieur Miſippe va dedans un chariot.*

Phil. *Et quant à nos ſerviteurs, ils nous ſuivront à pied.*

Le Serv. *Meſſieurs, tout eſt preſt.* Phil. *ça montons.*

Hen. *Allons; quelle heure penſez-vous que ce ſoit?*

hay, and their manger full of oates, and now there is not one jotte of hay, nor one graine of oates left.

Phil. Let them bee ſaddled and bridled, I will ride upon my burnt-ſorrell, put a foot-cloth on him: Mr. Henry ſhall ride the dapple gray. And thoſe other Gentlemen, how are they furniſhed?

Henry. Maſter Doctor rides upon a faire ambling horſe, maſter Samuel a hired horſe verie leane, and maſter Miſippus goes in a Waggon.

Phil. And as for our men, they ſhall follow us on foot.

Serv. Gentlemen, all is ready. *Phil.* Come let us take horſe.

Hen. Let us goe; what doe you thinke it is a clocke?

Phil.

Phil. *Ie cognois au ſoleil qu'il eſt paſſé huict heures.*

Henry. *Dieu vous gard Meſſieurs, & toute la compagnie.*

Le Docteur. *Et vous auſſi, Monſieur Henry.*

Phil. *Bonne vie & longue monſieur le Docteur, & à toute voſtre compagnie, nous ſommes treſmarris vous faire tant attendre.*

Samuel. *Vous ne nous faites point trop attendre, nous ne faiſons que monter à cheval, vous venez tout à poinct.*

Phil. *Monſieur Henry maniez ce cheval un peu doucement, car il eſt un peu chatonilleux à la pointe, & eſt pour mettre ſon homme par terre.*

Sam. *O que voicy un cheval qui ſecouë bien ſon homme, il me caſſera*

Phil. I know by the ſunne, it is paſt eight a clocke.

Henry. God ſave you Gentlemen, and all the company.

Doctor. And you alſo maſter Henry.

Phil. God give you good morrow maſter Doctor, and all your company; wee are very ſorry wee make you tarrie ſo long.

Sam. You make us not tarrie over long ſir, wee are but new got on horſe-backe, you come in very good time.

Phil. Maſter Henry, manage that horſe ſomewhat gently, for hee is a little quicke on the ſpurre, and will doe his beſt to caſt his rider.

Sam. O that here is a horſe ſhakes a man vildlie, hee will breake

tous les os.

Hen. *Quelle ſelle avez-vous là? je penſe que c'eſt un baſt.*

Sam. *Il ne s'en fault gueres; car il n'y a point de poitral, & la croupiere eſtoit deſcouſuë, mais je l'ay raccouſtree avec une eſguillette.*

Hen. *Deça Meſſieurs, deçà, tournons à gauche, afin d'eviter ceſte fange, & tenons ce petit ſentier, qui eſt plaiſant & aiſé.*

Phil. *Non, non, il n'y a rien meilleur ni plus ſeur que le grand chemin: car nous perdrons noſtre compagnie par ces chemins eſgarez, principalement parce que ce chemin (ſi bien je m'en ſouviens) eſt fort tortu & mal aiſé à tenir.*

Sam. *Voicy un cheval qui brunche à chaſque pas, il choperoit*

all my bones.

Hen. What a ſaddle have you there? I thinke it is a pack-ſaddle.

Sam. It is but little better; for there is no petrell, and the crupper was unſowed, but I have mended it with a point.

Hen. This way, Gentlemen, let us turne on the left hand, to ſhunne that dirt, and let us keepe this path, which is pleaſant and eaſie.

Philip. No, no, there is nothing better nor ſafer, then to keepe the common road-way; for in theſe by-wayes wee may loſe our companie, eſpecially ſeeing this way (if I remember well) is very crooked and hard to keepe.

Sam. Here is a horſe that ſtumbleth at every ſteppe, he would ſtumble

à un festu. *Monsieur le Docteur, arrestez un peu, jusques à ce que le mareschal aye ferré vostre haquenee, qui a perdu le fer du pied drois.*

Doct. *Mon amy, ferrez bien mon cheval: combien y-a il d'icy à Londres?*

Le Mareschal. *Sept lieuës & demie, ou quinze mil.*

Doct. *Quel chemin faut-il tenir?*

Le Mareschal. *Suivez tousiours le grand chemin sans vous fourvoyer ny a dextre ni à seneſtre.*

Doct. *Ça, amenez-moy mon cheval: combien vous doy-je maintenant?*

Le Mares. *Cinq sols.*

Doct. *Les voilà. Allons messieurs.*

Phil. *Ie pense que nous sommes fourvoyez.*

at a straw. Master Doctor, stay a little, till the Smith have shodde your ambling nagge, which hath lost his right-foot shooe.

Doct. Friend, shooe my horse well: how farre is it hence to London?

The Smith. Seven leagues and an halfe, or fifteene miles.

Doctor. Which way must we keepe.

The Smith. Follow still the broad high-way, without swarving to the right hand, or to the left.

Doct. Come, bring me my horse, how much doe I owe you now?

The Smith. Five souz, that is sixpence, English.

Doct. There it is. Let us goe Gentlemen.

Phil. I thinke wee are out of our way.

Doct.

Doct. *Mon ami, où eſt le plus court chemin d'icy à Londres?*

Sam. *Il ne vous entend point, il eſt ſourd.*

Hen. *Ho, bon-homme, par où va-on à Londres?*

Le paiſan. *Par icy Meſſieurs, vous avez failli: deſtournez vos chevaux à ces deux chemins, & ſuivez celuy du long de la riviere, il vous menera tout droit ſans faillir, & n'en y a point d'autre juſques à un vieil cheſne, de là tournez vous tout court à ceſte main.*

Hen. *Nous vous remercions.*

Le paiſ. *Dieu vous conduiſe.*

Phil. *Nous voici pres de la ville.*

Henry. *Nous ſommes arrivez bien à temps: Ou logez vous Monſieur le*

Doct. Friend, which is the neareſt way from hence to London?

Sam. Hee heares you not, he is deafe.

Henry. Ho, honeſt man, which way goe we to London?

Countriman. This way Gentlemen, you have failed: turne your horſes to theſe two wayes, and follow that which is along the river, it will bring you ſtraight on without failing, and there is no other way till you come to an old oake, there turne ſuddenly on this hand.

Henry. Wee thanke you.

Countr. God be your guide.

Phil. Now wee draw neere to the Citie.

Hen. We are come in good time: where doe you lodge Maſter *Docteur*?

Docteur?

Doct. *Au cigne noir en la ruë d'holbourn.*

Phil. *Et nous pareillement, car c'eſt une hoſtelerie, où l'an eſt fort bien traicté.*

Sam. *Par icy Meſſieurs, où allez-vous?*

Phil. *Il eſt vray, c'eſt le plus court chemin.*

L'hoſte. *Vous eſtes les bien venus Meſſieurs, & toute l'honorable compagnie.*

Doct. *Grand merci mon hoſte.*

Phil. *Où eſt le Palefrenier?*

L'hoſte. *Appelez-le.*

Doct. *Tenez mon cheval, promenez-le, mais ne le deſſellez point encores.*

Phil. *Menez-les boire, & faites-leur bonne littiere.*

Le Palefrenier. *N'en ayez pas peur Meſſieurs,*

Doctor?

Doct. At the blacke ſwan in Holborne.

Phil. And wee likewiſe, for it is an Inne, where men are very well uſed.

Sam. This way Gentlemen, whither goe you?

Phil. It is true, this is the neerer way.

The Inne-keeper. You are welcome Gentlemen, and all your good companie.

Doctor. Grammercie mine hoſte.

Phil. Where is the Oſtler?

Hoſt. Call him.

Doctor. Hold my horſe, walke him, but doe not unſaddle him yet.

Phil. Lead them to water, and make them good litter.

The Oſtler. Feare yee not Gentlemen,

je

je les penseray bien.

Hen. *Escoutez, donnez leur de bon foin, & de bonne avoine.*

Le Palef. *Ils n'auront faute de rien*

Phil. *Chambellan, monstrez-nous nos chambres.*

Doct. *Où est nostre hostesse?*

Hen. *Mon hostesse, qu'avons-nous à Souper?*

Hostes. *Descendez en la cuisine s'il vous plaist, pour y voir.*

Sam. *Laissez m'en la charge Messieurs, j'y pourvoirray.*

Phil. *Et bien, Monsieur Henry, vous & moy irons nous promener en la ville, en attendant que le souper s'appreste.*

Hen. *Ie le veux de bon cœur: car aussi bien me faut-il acheter plusieurs choses dont j'ay besoing.*

Phil. *Allons donc.*

I will dresse them well.

Hen. Doe you heare? give them good hay, and good oates.

The Ostler. They shall want nothing.

Phil. Chamberlaine, shew us our chambers.

Doct. Where is our hostesse?

Hen. Hostesse, what have we to supper?

Hostes. Come downe into the kitchin sir, I pray you and see.

Sam. Gentlemen, leave the charge of that to me, I will provide for it.

Phil. Well master Henry, you and I will goe walke into the Citie, whilest supper is making ready.

Hen. With all my heart sir: for I must buy many things too that I have need of.

Phil. Let us goe then.

La

La Lingere. *Messieurs, que vous plaist-il? voudriez vous aucunes belles toilles? vous plaist-il acheter de chemises, de fraises, de rabats, de mouchoirs, de bonnets de nuict, de chausses à botter, de chaussons, ou quelque autre chose que nous ayons?*

Phil. *Entrons en ceste boutique.*

Le Mercier. *Que vous plaist il voir Monsieur?*

Phil. *Monstrez-moy du meilleur satin que vous ayez.*

Le Mer. *De quelle couleur vous en plaist-il? De quelle couleur en demandez-vous? de noir, de blanc, de verd, de rouge, de jaune, de bleu, de bleu celeste, de pourpre, cendré, orengé, violet, changeant,* &c.

Phil. *I'en veux voir de noir.*

Le Merc. *Voila une*

The Seamster. What lacke yee Gentlemen? would you have any good linnen cloth? will it please you buy some shirts, ruffe bands, falling bands, handkerchefs, night-caps, boothose, socks, or any thing else that we have?

Phil. Let us goe into this shop.

The Mercer. What will you please to see sir?

Phil. Shew mee the best sattin that you have.

The Mer. Of what colour will it please you have it? what colour doe you demand? black, white, greene, red, yellow, blew, watchet, purple, ash-colour, orenge-colour, violet, changeable, &c.

Phil. I would see some blacke.

The Merc. There is a

piece

piece du meilleur ſatin qui ſoit dans ceſte ville, il eſt plain de ſoye, & la couleur en eſt belle.

Phil. *N'eſt il point gommé? que faites vous l'aulne de ce ſatin? ne me le ſurfaites pas, & j'en prendray dix aulnes.*

Le Mer. *Ne voulez-vous qu'un mot? vous en payerez dixſept ſchelins l'aulne.*

Phil. *C'eſt trop, vous eſtes trop cher.*

Le Mer. *Combien vous en plaiſt-il bailler?*

Phil. *Ie vous en bailleray ſept francs, ce ſont quatorze ſchelins.*

Le Mer. *Il me revient à plus que vous ne m'offrez: je ne le ſçauroye vendre à tel prix, j'y perdrois.*

Phil. *Vous plaiſt il me le donner? Ie vous en bailleray dix ſols, ou un ſchelin d'avantage.*

piece of the beſt ſatin, that is in this Citie, it is full of ſilke, and the colour of it is faire.

Phil. Is it not gummed? how ſell you the ell of this ſatin? doe not overpriſe it unto me, & I will take ten ells of it.

The Mer. Will you have but one word? you ſhall pay for it ſeventeen ſhillings the ell.

Phil. It is too deare, you are too deare.

The Mer. What will it pleaſe you to give?

Phil. I will give you for it ſeven franks, that is, fourteene ſhillings.

The Mer. It ſtands me in more then you offer mee: I cannot ſell it for that price, I ſhould loſe by it.

Phil. Shall I have it? I will give you tenne ſouz, or one ſhilling more.

The Mer.

Le Mer. *C'eſt trop peu certes: il m'en couſte d'avantage: prenez le pour ſeize ſchelins.*

Phil. *Ie n'en donneray non plus, regardez ſi vous le voulez.*

Hen. *Avez-vous de bon drap d'or?*

Le Mer. *Ouy Monſieur, d'auſſi bon que s'en peut trouver.*

Hen. *Que je voye: monſtre m'en de meilleur, ſi vous en avez.*

Le Mer. *Vous n'en ſçauriez trouver de meilleur.*

Hen. *Combien vendez vous la verge de ceſtuy-là?*

Le Mercer. *Vous n'en payerez que cinq eſcus, ou quinze francs, ou trente ſchelins la verge.*

Hen. *Ie ne veux point de ceſtuy-la: combien vendez vous l'aune de ceſtuy-cy?*

Phil. *Ie ne bailleray*

The Mer. It is too little truly; it coſt mee more: take it for ſixteene ſhillings.

Phil. I will give no more, ſee if you will take it.

Hen. Have you any good cloth of gold?

The Mer. Yes ſir, as good as any can bee found.

Hen. Let me ſee it, ſhew me ſome better, if you have any.

The Mercer. You can finde no better ſir.

Hen. How ſell you that ſame the yard?

The Mer. You ſhall pay me for it but five crowns, or 15. frankes, or 30. ſhilling, the yard.

Henry. I will none of that, how ſell you the yarde of this?

Phil. I will not give

pas

pas une eſpingle d'avantage que ſept francs & quinze ſols, ce ſont quinze ſchelins & demi, choiſiſſez ſi vous voulez prendre mon argent, ou non: ne me chaſſez point ailleurs, vous n'en aurez pas un denier plus de moy, car j'en ay desja trop offert.

a pin more then ſeven franks & fifteene ſouz, that is, fifteene ſhillings and ſix pence, chooſe you whether you will take my money or no: Do not drive mee to another place, you ſhall not have one penie more of me, for I have offred too much already.

Le Mer. *Il me fait mal de vous eſconduire, encores que je n'y gaigne rien: vous l'aurez en eſperance que vous achepterez de nous, quand vous en aurez beſoing. Orſus, combien vous en plaiſt-il? combien vous en plaiſt-il d'aulnes?*

The Mer. I am loth to denie you, though I get nothing by it: you ſhall have it in hope you will buy of us, when you ſhall have need. Go to, how much will it pleaſe you have? how many ells would you have?

Phil. *Sept aulnes & demie & demi quartier.*

Phil. Seaven ells and an halfe, and halfe a quarter.

Le Mer. *Le tout revient à cinq livres, dixhuict ſchelins, deux deniers & un fardin, ou le quart d'un*

The Mer. That commeth all to five pounds, eighteene ſhillings, two pence farthing

denier

denier ſterlin ; ou en monnoye de France, à cinquante neuf livres, un ſol, dix deniers & maille.

Phil. *Bien, meſurez-le, & faites bonne meſure. Tenez, voila voſtre argent, contez le.*

Le Mer. *Ie vous prie, changez-moy ceſte piece d'or, qui n'eſt pas de poids, elle eſt legere de ſix grains.*

Phil. *En voila d'autres, prenez-en voſtre chois, puis rendez moy mon reſte.*

Le Mer. *Ie les veux peſer : je prendray ceſte-cy, voila voſtre reſte.*

Phil. *Et bien, eſtes vous content ? eſtes vous payé ?*

Le Mer. *Ouy Monſieur, je vous remercie treſhhumblement : croyez que vous avez bien fait voſtre emploite. Ne vous*

ſtarling, or in French money to fiftie nine livers, one ſouz, tenne deniers and halfe penie.

Phil. Well, meaſure it, and make good meaſure. Hold, there is your money, tell it.

The Mer. I pray you change me this peece of gold, which is not weight, it wanteth ſixe graines.

Phil. There bee others, take your choice of them, and then give me the reſt againe.

The Mer. I will weigh them : I will take this ſame, there is your reſt.

Phil. Well, are you contented ? are you paid ?

The Mer. Yes ſir, I moſt humbly thanke you : beleeve mee you have beſtowed your money well. Want you

faut-il point de veloux, de veloux à ramage, de taffetas, de taffetas velouté? vous plaiſt-il point acheter de damas, de camelot ondoyé, ou ſans onde, de fuſtaine de Milan, &c.

Phil. *Non pas pour ceſte fois.*

Le Mer. *N'eſpargnez choſe qui ſait ceans: tout eſt à voſtre commandement.*

Phil. *Ie vous remercie. Adieu Monſieur.*

Le Mer. *Dieu vous doint bonne vie & longue Meſſieurs.*

L'orfevre. *Meſſieurs vous plaiſt-il acheter des bagues? voudriez vous voir une belle chaine d'or, un beau carcan, des groſſes perles orientales, un bon diamant, une belle eſmeraulde, ou quelques autres pierreries?*

Phil. *Allons maintenant*

no velvet, branced velvet, taffeta, tuft-taffeta? will it pleaſe you buy any damaske, chamlet watered or unwatered, Millan fuſtian, *&c.*

Phil. No, not at this time.

The Mer. Spare nothing that wee have, all is at your command.

Phil. I thanke you. Fare you well ſir.

The Mer. God bee with you Gentlemen.

The Gold-ſmith Gentlemen, will it pleaſe you buy any rings, or jewels? will you ſee a faire chaine of gold, a faire carkanet, great orientall pearles, a good Diamond, a faire Emeralde, or any other precious ſtones?

Phil. Let us goe now

nant chez le Drapier.

Le Drapier. *Que demandez vous Messieurs? Ne vous fault il point de bon carizé, de la frisade, de drap, de bonne escarlate?*

Phil. *Que ie voye une bonne piece de drap.*

Hen. *I'iray ce pendant en ceste autre boutique pour acheter de la soye, du passement d'or & d'argent, des rubens de soye, & des esguillettes.*

Phil. *Comme il vous plaira.*

Hen. *Et bien, avez acheté tout ce qu'il vous faut?*

Phil. *Nenni pas encore: Il me faut avoir un chapeau, une ceinture, de bas d'estame, de bas de soye, une paire de gands, & de pendants d'espee.*

Hen. *Remettez-le à une autre fois: car je*

to the Drapers.

The Draper. What lacke yee Gentlemen? Want you no good kersie, bayes, cloth, good Skarlet?

Phil. Let me see a good peece of cloth.

Hen. I will goe in the meane time into this other shop for to buy some silke, some gold and silver lace, silke rebands, and some points.

Phil. As you please sir.

Hen. Well, have you bought all that you need?

Phil. No, not yet: I must have a hat, a girdle, a paire of worsted stockings, a paire of silke stockings, a paire of gloves, and sword-hangers.

Hen. Put it off till another time; for I

voy qu'il est tard.

Phil. *Allons donc, retournons nous en.*

Hen. *ça mon ami, ostez mes esperons, & tirez mes bottes.*

Phil. *Où est mon serviteur?*

Le Serv. *Me voicy Monsieur. Que vous plaist-il?*

Phil. *Allez-moy querir le tailleur, afin qu'il prenne ces estoffes pour m'en faire un manteau, un pourpoint & un haut-de-chausses.*

Hen. *Et dites au cordonnier, qui demeure au bout de la rue, qu'il m'apporte une paire de bottes de marroquin blanc, & une paire de souliers de marroquin noir.*

Phil. *Qu'il m'apporte aussi des mules, des escarpins, & des pantoufles.*

Le Ser. *Bien Monsieur j'y vay.*

see it is late.

Phil. Let us goe then, let us returne.

Hen. Here friend, come take off my spurs and pull off my bootes.

Phil. Where is my man?

Servant. Here sir, what is your pleasure?

Phil. Goe fetch me the Taylor, that he may take away these stuffes for to make me a cloak, a doublet, and a paire of breeches.

Hen. And bid the shooemaker, that dwels at the streets end, bring mee a paire of white Spanish-leather bootes, and a paire of blacke spanish-leather shooes.

Phil. Let him bring me also some pantoffles, pompes, & slippers.

Serv. Well sir, I goe.

L'Hoste.

L'Hoſte. *Meſſieurs, la viande ſe gaſte, & la compagnie vous attend, vous plaiſt-il venir ſouper?*

Phil. *Treſvolontiers, mon hoſte.*

Doct. *ça Meſſieurs lavons.*

Phil. *Verſes à la ronde.*

L'hoſte. *Seez vous Meſſieurs, Monſieur le Docteur, prenez s'il vous plaiſt ce haut bout.*

Hen. *Monſieur Philippes mettez-vous: je m'aſſeray de l'autre coſté.*

Doct. *Beniſſons la table: Pere celeſte, &c.*

Phil. *Monſieur Samuel, vous plaiſt-il de ce gigot de mouton?*

L'Hoſte. *Oſtez ce bouilli, & approchez ces lapins, ce chapon roſti, & ces beccaſſes.*

Philip. *Mon hoſte,*

The Hoſte. Gentlemen the meat marreth, and the companie ſtayes for you, will it pleaſe you come to ſupper?

Phil. Very willingly mine hoſt.

Doct. Come Gentlemen, let us waſh.

Phil. Poure round.

The hoſt. Sit ye downe Gentlemen: Maſter Doctor, take I pray you this upper end.

Hen. Sit downe maſter Philip; I will ſit on the other ſide.

Doct. Let us bleſſe the boord: O heavenly Father, *&c.*

Phil. Maſter Samuel, will you have any of this leg of mutton?

The hoſt. Take away this boild meat, and ſet neerer thoſe rabets, that roſted capon, and thoſe Woodcocks.

Philip. Mine hoſte,

descoupez s'il vous plaist ce chapon-là.

L'hoste. *Ie boyray un coup avant que l'entamer: Ie salue vos bonnes graces Monsieur le Docteur, & celles de tout la compagnie.*

Doct. *Dieu le vous benisse mon hoste.*

L'hoste. *Messieurs, je vous supplie faire bonne chere & estre joyeux.*

Phil. *Monsieur vous plaist-il l'aisle ou la cuisse? vous serviray-je monsieur?*

Sam. *Ie vous baise la main monsieur.*

L'hoste. *Messieurs, je ne vous donne rien, vous en prendrez là où il vous plaira.*

Doct. *Chascun cerchera ses appetits: celuy à qui on donne, ne choisit pas. Versez-moy à boire en ce verre, il me faut boire à monsieur Philippes, & à Monsieur Henry.*

cut up that Capon I pray you.

The Host. I will drink once before I cut it up: I drinke to you master Doctor, and to all the good companie.

Doct. Much good may it do you mine host.

The Host. Gentlemen, I pray you eate and bee merrie.

Phi. Sir, will it please you have the wing or the leg? shall I help you sir?

Sam. I kisse your hand sir.

The Host. Gentlemen I doe not carve to you, you shall take where you please.

Doct. Let every one take what likes his appetite best: he that hath it given him, chooseth not. Fill me some drink in that glasse: I must drinke to Mr. Philip, and to master Henry.

Le

Le Ser. *Du-quel vous plaiſt-il Monſieur?*

Doct. *Du clairet.*

Le S. *En voyla Monſieur.*

Doct. *Or-ça Meſſieurs à voſtre ſanté.*

Phil. *Prouface Monſieur le Docteur.*

Hen. *Monſieur je vous baiſe les mains, ie vous pleigeray icy.*

L'hoſte. *Or ça enfans, oſtez ces viandes, & apportez le deſert.*

Hen. *Monſieur noſtre hoſte, où eſt noſtre hoſteſſe, qu'elle ne nous vint tenir compagnie?*

L'hoſte. *Vous l'excuſerez pour ce ſoir s'il vous plaiſt, demain elle recompenſera le tort qu'elle vous auroit fait par ſon abſence.*

Doct. *Qu'on oſte la table, & rendons graces à Dieu: nous te rendons graces Dieu tresbenin,* &c.

Serv. Which will you pleaſe to drinke of ſir?

Doc. ſome claret wine.

Ser. There is ſome ſir.

Doc. Here Gentlemen, to your good health.

Phil. Much good do it you maſter Doctor.

Hen. Sir I thanke you, I will pledge you here.

The Ho. Come fellows take away theſe meats, and bring us the fruit.

H. Mine hoſt, where is our hoſteſſe, that ſhe came not to beare us companie?

The Hoſt. I pray you excuſe her for this night, to morrow ſhee ſhall recompence the wrong ſhe hath done you now by her abſence.

Doct. Take away the table, & let us give God thanks. Wee give thee thankes moſt gracious God, *&c.*

Dialogue deuxieſme.

Des exerciſes de la Nobleſſe.

DV Sens. *Il faut que les exercices, auxquels on dreſſe une noble jeuneſſe, ayent deux fins, aſçavoir, pour la rendre capable de ſervir au public, puis pour s'en ſçavoir prevaloir elle meſme, tant pour l'eſgard de la recreation de l'eſprit, que pour la ſanté, & agilité du corps. Et le premier exercice, au quel j'eſtime qu'un Gentil-homme ſe doit adonner, c'eſt à danſer.*

Louis. *Ie le deſireroy tout jeune, car ces grands corps, qui ſont à l'aage de vingt ans, ſont*

The ſecond Dialogue.

Of the exerciſes of Nobilitie and Gentrie.

Mr. *Wit.* The exerciſes in which the young Nobility are trained, muſt have theſe two ends, namely to make them capable for imployment in the common-weale, and alſo to bee able to make uſe of them themſelves, as well for regard of the recreation of the minde, as for the health and agility of the body. And the firſt exerciſe, which I thinke a Gentleman ought to give himſelfe unto, is dancing.

Lewis. I would have him begin young, for theſe great bodies, which are about twentie, are

ſi roides & lourds, qu'à grand peine le ſçaura-on dreſſer : mais ſi de bonne heure il y met ſon eſtude, il prendra telle habitude de bien porter ſon corps qu'il trouvera puis apres un mouvement de ſes membres plus gay, leger, & libre.

Le Grave. *Ie trouve cet exerciſe trop ridicule; & croy qu'il a eſté inventé par des yvrongnes, leſquels eſchauffez de la fumee du vin, eſtoyent eſguillonnez à tels goffes & impertinents ſants & mouvemens.*

Du Sens. *L'abus ne doibt pourtant oſter l'uſage des choſes; quand le Gentilhomme apprend de jeuneſſe à bien porter ſes membres, il eſt puis apres plus adroit au maniement*

ſo ſtiffe, & unweldy, that they can very hardly bee framed to it : but if betimes he apply himſelfe to it, hee will take ſuch a habitude of comely cariage of his bodie, that hee will afterwards finde a more lively, light, and free moving of his members.

Mr. Grave. I hold this exerciſe too ridiculous, and am perſwaded it was invented by drunkards, who being heated with the fume of the wine, were ſtirred up to ſuch foppiſh and unfit leapings and motions.

M. Wit. Yet for all that, the abuſe of a thing ought not take away the uſe thereof : when a Gentleman learnes from his youth to carrie his limbes well, he is afterward the apter for the handling

d'une

d'une eſpée, & port des armes: & toutesfois ne deſire-ie que le Gentilhomme ſoit par trop ambitieux de ſçavoir ſi à fond la ſciencé des pieds de ſon maiſtre, mais bien pluſtoſt qu'il ſoit curieux de l'imiter en ſa bonne grace.

Lou. *Il faut qu'un Courtiſan ſoit pourveu de telles parties, qui le puiſſent recommender, & orner, & vous ſçavez qu'il n'y a aucun exercice qui le puiſſe plus faire paroiſtre, & luy donner plus d'accez aux bonnes compagnies que la danſe; car de demeurer planté contre la tapiſſerie d'une ſale, comme un ſonge creux, & n'oſer accepter une danſe qui vous ſera preſentee, il me ſemble que cela eſt plus propre à un valet de chambre*

of a ſword, and bearing of armes: and yet I would not have a Gentleman be too ambitiouſly deſirous to know ſo exactly the foot-skill of his teacher, but I wiſh hee ſhould rather bee curious to imitate him in his grace-full cariage.

Lew. A Courtier muſt bee furniſhed with ſuch qualities, as may commend and adorne him, and you know that there is not any exerciſe that can more ſet him forth, and give him freer acceſſe into good companies, then dancing; for, to ſtand ſtocke ſtill againſt the hangings of a roome, like a dreaming gull, and not to dare to accept a dance when it is offered, ſeemeth rather to bee fitter for a Groome of the chamber then for

qu'à

qu'à un Gentilhomme.

Du Sens. *Ie trouve le jeu de paume aussi fort seant à un Gentilhomme: car outre le plaisir qu'il y prend, encores y entretient il sa santé. Quant aux eschets & tablier, ie les trouve plus propres à un veillard, qu'à un jeune Gentilhomme, qui en son jeu ne doibt demeurer assis sus une escabelle: & outre cela, il en procede une autre inconvenient, c'est que les jeux estz nous inventez pour la recreation, & pour effacer la tristesse, de ceux cy ne peut proceder que melancholie & chagrin, pour estre difficiles & fascheux à iouer.*

Louis. *Ie tiens pour le jeu de cartes & dez que c'est rusticité & lourdise qu'un Gentil-*

a Gentleman.

M Wit. I hold also tennise play to be very seemly for a Gentleman: for besides the pleasure hee may take therein, he shall ther by also maintaine his health. As for Chesse, and table-play I hold them fitter for an old man, then for a young Gentleman, who in his play should not remaine sitting on a stoole: and besides, there proceedeth another inconvenience of it, namely, that whereas playes were all invented for recreation, and for to put away sadnesse, from these same comes nothing but melancholie and pensivenesse, for that they are difficult and troublesome to play.

Lew. As for dice and card-playing, I hold it a clownishnesse, and blockishnesse for a Gentleman

homme

homme l'ignore.

Le Grave. *Ie ſeroy d'advis qu'il ne ſceuſt que c'eſt que de dez, ou de cartes, car cela incite à l'avarice, ou prodigalité, & l'enflamme à faire des querelles, que ſont puis apres difficiles à deſmeſler.*

Du Sens. *Monſieur, il y a bien de la diſtinction entre un jeu, & le mauvais uſage où on le rapporte; c'eſt honneur de ſçavoir par fois joüer à ces jeux, & qui donnent de l'entree, & fait prendre privauté en la maiſon des grands, car ils aiment volontiers ceux qui les accompagnent aux exercices, où ils ſe delectent. Faiſons donc des limites au jeu & ne les outrepaſſons point, & nous n'acquerrons*

to bee ignorant in them.

M. Gr. And my opinion is, that hee ſhould not know what belongs to dice, or cardes, for that it ſtirreth up to covetouſneſſe or prodigalitie, and enflameth men to quarrels, which can hardly afterwards bee pacified.

M. Wit. Sir, there is ſome difference betweene a play or game, and the evill uſe whereunto it is put: it is a credite ſometimes to be able to play at theſe games, being a meanes of entrance, and of growing into familiaritie in the houſes of great men, for they commonly love ſuch as beare them companie at the exerciſes, wherein they delight. Let us then ſet limites unto play, and tranſgreſſe not thoſe bounds, ſo ſhall wee not purchaſe any

point

point de blaſme, honte & meſpris. Ie ne dis qu'il faille jouër, mais bien qu'on peut jouër ſans en faire meſtier, auſſi n'y a-il rien de plus honteux & meſpriſé, & qui ſente moins ſon enfant de bon lieu, qu'un jouëur & berlandier, qu'en a acquis le nom.

blame, ſhame and contempt. I ſay not that one muſt needs play, but that he may play, without making a trade of it, and indeed there is nothing more ſhamefull and contemptuous, and which ſavoureth leſſe of noble breeding, than to be and have gotten the name of a common gameſter, and hunter of dicing houſes.

Le Grave. *Mais quand un violent & ardent deſir de gaigner vous enflamme, ou la colere d'avoir perdu, eſt-ce un jeu, un exercice, un paſſe temps? n'eſt-ce pas pluſtoſt une paſſion, fureur & frenaiſie?*

M.Gr. But when men are enflamed with a violent and ardent deſire of winning, or with choler for having loſt, is it then a play, an exerciſe, or a paſtime? is it not rather a paſſion, a furie and a madneſſe?

Du Sens. *Là où cette avarice & convoitiſe de l'argent d'autruy, commence à gaigner un jeune homme, & le met hors de ſoy,*

M.Wit. When as that greedie deſire and covetouſneſſe of other mens money beginneth to prevaile over a young man, and to tranſport him ſo

qu'il

qu'il trepigne, qu'il jure, blaſpheme, maugree, il n'en faut plus donner le blaſme aux dez ou aux cartes, & dire que c'eſt le diable qui les a inventez, parce qu'en portant un tel vice ſur ſoy, il pourra auſſi bien faire paroiſtre ſa paſſion à la paulme qu'en ce jeu. Partant, il ne faut pas blaſmer le jeu, mais l'excés, l'aigreur, l'opiniaſtreté & la mauvaiſe fin où on l'attache. Auſſi ne s'y faut-il point tant opiniaſtrer, tant pour eviter diſſention, que d'autres inconveniens que le jeu enfante: car un Gentilhomme qui ne s'en corrige, s'y appauvrira comme un gueux, & y ſervira puis apres de fable & de jouët du monde; car quoy qu'on luy

far from himſelfe that hee ſtampeth, that he ſweares, blaſphemeth and curſeth, we muſt no more blame the dice or cards, and ſay the divell invented them; for as much as carying ſuch a vice about him, he may as well make his paſſion appeare at the Tennis, as in this game. The play therefore is not to be blamed, but the exceſſe thereof, the eagernesse, the obſtinacy, & the evill end that accompanies it. Neither muſt one be ſo obſtinately bent unto it, both to avoide diſſention, as alſo other inconveniences ariſing of play: for the Gentleman that will not correct himſelfe of this, will bring himſelfe to beggerie, and will then become the common talk and jeſting ſtocke of every man: for though they affoord him

donne

donne la moitie du tapis, tandis que ſon argent dure, on ne le reconnoiſtra plus, l'ayant perdu.

Le Grave. *Laiſſons ces jeux là, & paſſons aux plus ſerieux. Pour le tirer des armes c'eſt un exercice, qui ne veut eſtre appris ſi jeune que la danſe, veu que la force y eſt plus requiſe.*

Louis. *Si eſt-ce qu'il ne faut pas laiſſer paſſer le dix ou douze ans, ſans mettre quelque fleuret à la main d'un Gentilhomme; car bien qu'il n'ait la force de s'en ſervir, il s'accouſtume neantmoins d'avoir les armes belles, en attendant qu'il les puiſſe avoir bonnes tout enſemble.*

Du Sens. *Mais il ne*

his part of the carpet, whileſt his money laſteth, yet that once loſt, they will no more know him.

M. Grave. Let us leave theſe games, and paſſe to others more ſerious. For fencing or the handling and uſe of weapons, it is an exerciſe, which would not be learned ſo young as dancing, ſeeing that more ſtrength is requiſite to it.

Lew. Yet muſt wee not let 10. or 12. yeares of age paſſe over, without putting ſome foile into the hand of a young Gentleman; for though he have not ſtrength enough to to uſe it, yet he may accuſtome himſelfe, to have his armes faire, in the meane time, till hee may alſo have them good withall.

M. Wit. But it ſerveth

ſert

ſert de rien au gracieux port & maniement des membres, ce que la danſe a de particulier, mais il eſt bien plus neceſſaire, car il n'eſt pas ſi aiſé de reparer les fautes qui ſe font à l'eſpee blanche, que de corriger celles qu'on commet en ſortant de cadence en un braiſle: quand vous avez un coup d'eſtocade à travers les coſtes il ne faut plus dire, C'eſt à refaire.

Louis. *Vous en jugez fort bien. Auſſi le Gentilhomme doit eſtre vert, prompt & reſolu: & les aſſauts avec ceux de ſa taille luy entretiennent la pratique des leçons de ſon maiſtre.*

Du Sens. *Encores n'eſt il pas bien ſeant qu'un Gentilhomme aye*

nothing to the gracefull cariage and ſtirring of the limbes, as dancing in particular doth; yet it is farre more neceſſarie, for it is not ſo eaſie a matter to repaire the faults made with the naked ſword, as to amend ſuch as are committed in being out of cadence in a dance: when you have a thruſt through the ſides, it is to no purpoſe to ſay, Let us begin againe, it is but mending it.

Lew. You judge very well of it. Alſo the Gentleman ought to bee ſtrong, ready and reſolute: and the bickerings with others of his ſtature, ſhould maintaine his practice of the leſſons his maſter teacheth him.

M. Wit. Yet is it not ſeemely, that a Gentleman ſhould have his face often

ſouvent

ſouvent la face meurtrie de coups de fleuret qui luy fait garder la chambre quelque jours, ou bien le retient d'aller veoir les compagnies en tel eſtat, partant ne ſuis-je d'avis, qu'il tire à toutes heures, ni avec toutes ſortes de perſonnes.

Lou. *Si faut il qu'il s'exerce.*

Du Sens. *Ie ne nie point, qu'il ne ſoit utile de s'exercer, mais quoy qu'un Gentilhomme doive apprendre ce qui ſe peut monſtrer de cette ſcience, ſi ne faut il qu'il en eſpere & attende ſon avantage, lequel ne luy doibt eſtre aſſeuré d'ailleurs que de la grandeur de ſon courage, qui ne luy fera apprehender ce que ſon ennemi en pourroit ſçavoir plus que luy.*

battred with the blowes of a foile, ſo as to make him keepe his chamber ſome dayes, or keepe him from going to ſee the companies in that plight, therefore am I not of opinion, that hee ſhould at all houres bee practiſing, nor with all ſorts of perſons.

Lew. Yet muſt he be exerciſed.

M. Wit. I denie not, but that it is profitable to exerciſe himſelfe; but though a Gentleman ought to learn that which may bee ſhewed him of this ſcience, yet muſt hee not hope for and expect his advantage thereby, which ought to be aſſured unto him from no where elſe, but from the greatnes of his courage, wch ſhall make him not feare the skill that his enemie may haply have more then he.

Monſ. Sulli. *Ie deſireroy que noſtre diſcours fini nous tiraſſions un coup.*

Du Sens. *Monſieur à moy ne tiendra. Le monter à cheval eſt un exercice vrayement digne d'un enfant de bon lieu, mais n'eſtant pas une ſcience, qui s'apprenne en perfection en un an ou deux, je conſeille à celuy qui n'a ou le loiſir, ou le moyen d'en continuer l'apprentiſſage, qu'au moins le temps qu'il y employera ſoit tellement à ſon profit, qu'outre la belle aſſiette & ferme tenue qu'il y acquerra, il ſçache paſſablement bien faire faire à un cheval tout ce qui eſt le plus neceſſaire pour le ſervice de la guerre, aſçavoir courir la bague, & brider la*

Monſ. Sulli. I would faine, when our diſcourſe is ended, we may have a bout at it.

M. Wit. Sir, there ſhall be no let in me. To ride a horſe is an exerciſe truly worthy of one nobly deſcended: but not being a ſcience, which is learned in perfection in a yeare or two, I counſel him which hath not either the leaſure, or meanes to continue his learning longer, that (at the leaſt) the time that hee ſhall imploy therein, bee ſo much to his profite, that beſides his comely ſitting, and firme hold which hee ſhall get, hee may indifferently well bee able to make his horſe doe all that which is moſt neceſſarie for the ſervice of the warre, to wit, to runne at the ring, to know the

potence,

potence, connoiſtre les marques des chevaux, toute ſorte de poil, juger de leur bonté & tares, de l'aage, ſçavoir les maladies auſquelles ils ſont le plus ſubjects, & les remedes pour leur gueriſon,

Louis. *Cela ne ſuffit pour mettre un chevalier d'armes en campagne à tous eſſais, je veux qu'il ſçache donner quarriere, voltiger en l'air, franchir le foſsé, ſauter le palis, court-tourner en un cercle, tant à dextre qu'à ſeneſtre,* &c.

Monſ. Sulli. *Le voltiger eſt auſſi compris aux exercices neceſſaires, car il ſauve quelquefois la vie à celuy qui ſe ſçait jetter à propos dans la ſelle, ou ſur la croupe d'un cheval, c'eſt ce qu'on y doit*

markes of horſes, all the ſortes of their colours, to judge of their goodneſſe and faultes, of their age, to know the diſeaſes unto which they are moſt ſubject, and the remedies fit for their cure.

Lew. That is not ſufficient for to fit a man at armes into the field at all aſſayes, I would have him have the skill to performe a carriere, to curvet aloft, to leape over a ditch, or over a pale, to turne ſhort in a circle, both to the right hand and to the left.

Monſ. Sul. Vaulting is alſo compriſed among the neceſſarie exerciſes, for ſometimes it ſaveth the life of him, which can fitly caſt himſelfe into the ſaddle, or on the crupper of a horſe; this is that which ought to bee

le plus apprendre.

Le Grave. *Que dites vous des Mathematiques? La ſcience en eſt tresbelle, treſutile, & des plus neceſſaires à ceux qui veulent faire leur fortune dans les armes.*

Monſ.S. *C'eſt un Dedale, car elles ont tant de parties, que pour les apprendre une chaſcune à fond, il y faudroit dix vies d'homme.*

Le Grave. *Auſſi n'eſt il de beſoing que cela ſoit appris à fond.*

Du Sens. *Mais qui eſt la baſe & fondement de toutes les parties? n'eſt-ce pas l'Arithmetique?*

Le Grave. *Iuſtement; car elle traicte des nombres, qui ſont les inſtrumens deſquels on ſe ſert pour exprimer les dimenſions.*

learned by him moſt.

M.Gr. What ſay you of the Mathematicks? the knowledge therof is moſt commendable and moſt profitable, and one of the moſt neceſſarie for them that would make their fortunes in Armes.

Monſ.Sul. It is a Dedalus labyrinth, for it hath ſo many parts, that for to learne each of them to the full depth, would require tenne mens lives.

M.Grave. Neither is it needfull to be learned ſo, to the very depth thereof.

M.Wit. But what is the ground and foundation of all the parts? is it not Arithmeticke?

M. Grave. Right ſir, for that treateth of numbers, which are the inſtruments uſed to expreſſe dimenſions by.

Du

Du Sens. *Qu'eſtce qui ſuit apres?*

Le Gr. *La Coſmographie, en laquelle eſt compriſe la deſcription du ciel, qu'on dit Aſtrologie, & celle de la terre, qu'on dit Geographie.*

Monſ.Su. *Ie trouve que la Geographie aide beaucoup à celuy qui ſe veut advancer en l'eſtude d'hiſtoire; car elle a cela de beau, qu'elle diſcourt de diverſes regions, nations, royaumes, provinces, fleuves, de mers, & autres choſes, qui ſont à conſiderer en tout ce grand corps & pourpris de l'univers. Ie n'euſſe jamais ſçeu ſi bien retenir & entendre mon hiſtoire de Thucidide, ſi je n'euſſe adiouſté à la lection d'iceluy, la table de Grece, où j'ay peu reconnoiſtre*

M.Wit. What followeth after that?

M.Gr. Coſmographie, in which is comprehended the diſcription of the heaven, called Aſtrologie, and that of the earth, called Geographie.

Monſ Sul. I finde that Geographie helpeth much him that will forward himſelfe in the ſtudie of hiſtorie; for it hath this good in it, that it diſcourſeth of divers regions, nations, kingdomes, provinces, rivers, ſeas, and other things which are to be conſidered in all this great bodie and circuit of the univerſe. I could never have beene able ſo well to underſtand and remember my hiſtorie of Thucidides, if I had not added to the reading of the ſame, the Mappe of Greece, wherein I might know the

l'aſſiette des lieux, les mers, fleuves, ruiſſeaux, les journées que faiſoyent les Capitaines avec leurs armées, leurs approches, retirades, deſtours, en ſomme, il me ſembloit voir le tout à l'œil, & au vif, j'y ay peu apprendre pluſieurs ruſes & fineſſes, ſtratagemes, avantages, d'un parti ſur ſon ennemi, & autres petites obſervations, qui illuſtrent l'hiſtoire, & en eſclaiciſſent l'intelligence.

ſituation of places, the ſeas, rivers, brookes, the journeys made by the Captaines with their armies, their approches, retyrings, turnings aſide, in a word, me thought I ſaw all with the eye, and to the life; I might learne thereby many ſubtilties and cunnings, ſtratagems, advantages of one partie over his enemie, and other ſmall obſervations, which illuſtrate the hiſtory, and cleere the underſtanding of it.

Du Sens. *Voila qui convient à un hiſtorien, & à un bon ſoldat, mais en particulier quelle partie eſt la plus neceſſaire à un homme d'armes?*

M. Wit. All this agreeeth well to an hiſtorian, and to a good ſouldier, but in particular which part is the moſt neceſſarie for a man at armes?

Le Grave. *C'eſt la Geometrie proprement, car elle luy apprend à meſurer la profondeur d'un foſſé, la hauteur*

M. Gr. That is Geometrie properly; for it teacheth him to meaſure the depth of a ditch, the height of a tower, the

d'une

d'une tour, l'eſtendue d'une campagne, en ſon eſchole faut il apprendre la ſcience de bien fortifier une place, de l'attaquer, de la defendre; elle l'inſtruict, comme il faut faire un retranchement, comme il faut loger une armee, comme on la range en bataille, quel ordre elle tient en marchant, quel devant une ville quel au lever d'un ſiege.

Du Sens. *Il faut non ſeulement avoir la connoiſſance & theorie de cela, mais il le faut auſſi rapporter à la prattique, à l'œuvre & à l'action.*

Voila en gros tous les utiles & neceſſaires exercices, que je peux requerir en un Gentilhomme, il reſte encores à parler de la chaſſe. Ie trouve la chaſſe eſtre

whole extent of a field; in her ſchoole muſt hee learne the ſcience of well fortifying a place, how to aſſault it, how to defend it; ſhee inſtructeth him, how hee muſt make a Trench, how hee muſt lodge an armie, how to ſet it in battaile array, what order it muſt obſerve in marching, what before a Towne, and what at the raiſing of a Siege.

M. Wit. Hee muſt have not onely the knowledge and theorie of that, but muſt alſo bring the ſame unto practice, to operation, and to action.

Here are in generall all the profitable and neceſſarie exerciſes, that I can require in a Gentleman, it remaineth yet to ſpeake of Hunting. I finde hunting to bee an exerciſe very fit for a Gentleman,

un exercice fort propre à un Gentilhomme, qui eſt deſia retiré en ſa maiſon, & ſurſes biens; mais tel s'y paſſionne & agite avec tant d'exces, que vous ne l'oyez jamais parler que de ſes oiſeaux, ou chiens, rompant & ruinant tout pour ce ſeul plaiſir.

Louis, *Pour toutes vos raiſons, ne voudrois-je oſter à un Gentilhomme la chaſſe, quoy qu'il ne fuſt encore retiré en ſa maiſon.*

Du Sens. *Je ne dis pas qu'il la luy faille oſter tout à fait, mais j'entens qu'il n'y doibt pas du tout employer ſon eſtude, & en faire meſtier ordinaire, au contraire je veux qu'il ſoit bien inſtruit à toute ſorte de chaſſe, pour en ſçavoir diſcourir en*

which is already retyred home to his houſe, and upon his meanes, but ſome are ſo paſſionately carried away with ſo much exceſſe herein, that you can heare them ſpeak of nothing elſe but of their Hawkes, or dogs, breaking downe and deſtroying all for this onely pleaſure.

Lew. Notwithſtanding all your reaſons, I would not debar a Gentleman from hunting, though he be not yet retired home to his houſe.

M Wit. I ſay not that hee ſhould bee debarred from it altogether, but my meaning is, that he ought not wholly employ his ſtudie in it, and make an ordinary occupation of it; yet on the contrary, I would have him bee well inſtructed in all ſort of hunting and hawking,

termes

termes propres, & n'eſtre veu ignorer ce qui eſt fort commun à ceux de ſa qualité.

Monſ. Sul. *Orça, veu que nous avons achevé la carriere de noſtre diſcours, Page apporte-icy les fleurets, & tirons un coup ou deux, Monſieur du Sens vous & moy.*

Du Sens. *Ie le veux bien: mais à quoy? à l'eſpee & poignard, ou à l'eſpee ſeule?*

Monſ. Sul. *A l'eſpee ſeule. Allons donc, mettez vous en garde.*

Louis. *Avancez-vous, battez du pied en frappant ſur le fleuret de voſtre homme, pouſſez & rabattez en vous retirant.*

Monſ. Sul. *Ay-je*

for to be able to diſcourſe of it in proper termes, and not to bee ſeene ignorant in that which is ſo very common to all them of his quality or degree.

Monſ. Sul. Come, ſeeing we have finiſhed the carreere of our diſcourſe, Page, bring hither the foiles, and let us play a bout or two, Maſter Wit, you and I.

M. Wit. With all my heart: but at what? at ſword and dagger, or at ſingle rapier?

Monſ. Sul. At ſingle rapier: Come then, put you upon your gard.

Lew. Step forwards ſir, beat your foote to the ground when you ſtrike on your fellowes folle, thruſt and beate backe in your retreat.

Monſ. Sul. Have I

bien

bien fait?

Louis. *vous n'eſtendez pas aſſez le bras, tenez le corps droit & le pied ferme.*

Du Sens. *Tenez, voila un beau coup d'eſtoc.*

Monſ.Sul. *Ho, je le tiens, je m'en vengeray. Tenez voilà un beau coup d'eſtrameçon.*

Du Sens. *Ie l'ay preſque paré trop tard.*

Lou. *Eſſayez à faire le feintes.*

Monſ. Sul. *Ho, me voila engagé.*

Louis. *Deſgagez-vous en paſſant voſtre fleuret par deſſus. Vous n'eſtez pas aſſeuré de voſtre coup, il le faut bien loger avant que le porter. Retirez vous & vous remettez en garde. Abordez & pouſſez ferme, ne levez ainſi le pied de derriere, car*

done well?

Lew. You ſtretch not out your arme enough, hold your bodie ſtraight, and your foot ſteady.

M. Wit. Hold, there is a faire thruſt.

M. Sul. Ho, I have it, I will be revenged. Hold, there is a faire downe-right blow.

M. Wit. I have almoſt warded it too late.

Lew. Trie to make your falſe proffers.

Monſ. Sul. Ha, now I am engaged.

Lew. Diſengage your ſelfe by paſſing your foyle underneath. You are not certaine of your thruſt, you muſt aime it well, before you give it. Withdraw your ſelfe, and put your ſelfe againe upon your gard. Approach, and thruſt firmely, lift not ſo up your hinder foot,

cela

cela vous emporte tout le corps, levez la main gauche, pour avoir du contrepoids : & bien, voilà une eſtocade, qui n'eſt pas mal portée.

Monſ. Sul. *Ie ſuis las.*

Du Sens. *Repoſez vous.*

Monſ. Sul. *Allons, retirons nous.*

for that will ſway with it all the bodie, lift up your left hand, to have ſome counterpoiſe: well, there is a thruſt indifferent well carried.

Monſ. Sul. I am wearie.

M. Wit. Reſt you.

Monſ. Sul. Let us goe, let us withdraw our ſelves.

Dialogue troiſieſme.

Du Voyageur.

CAſannier. *Ie n'approuve point la périgrination : primierement pour ce que nous n'avons que faire de ſçavoir ce qui ſe fait ailleurs, ains avons aſſez à ſoigner, & nous occuper chez nous.*

Eudoxe. *Le circuit de la terre n'a il pas eſté fait pour le manoir & habitation de l'homme? pourquoy donc en debvrions nous ignorer les eſtres & parties? N'oſerons-nous pas aller admirer les œuvres divines & incomparables qui y ſont, pour en louër l'ouvrier?*

Caſ. *Mais de quoy*

The third Dialogue.

Of the Traveller.

Caſanner. I like not this travelling : firſt, becauſe we have nothing to doe to know what is done in other countries, but have enough to take care for, and to employ our ſelves in, at home.

Eudoxus. Was not the circuit of the earth made for the habitation and dwelling place of man? why then ſhould wee be ignorant of the paſſages and parts thereof? ſhall we not dare to goe to admire the divine and incomparable works which are therein, for to give praiſe to the Workman?

Caſ. But what good

nous

nous ſert cela ? quel fruict peut on tirer de la perigrination ?

Eud. *La peregrination rend les hommes adviſez, prudens & diſcrets, non ſeulement pour leur utilité, mais pour le bien du public.*

Caſ. *On n'acquerra pas grand' prudence des mers, montagnes & bois.*

Curieux. *Ne ſçavez vous pas les vers d'Homere, qui parlant d'Vliſſe, qu'il propoſe au monde comme un patron d'un perſonnage caut & prudent, dit :*

Vlyſſe heureux je nomme, Qui de ſçavoir pouveu,
A les mœurs de maint homme, Et mainte terre veu.

Caſ. *Tout cela eſt bon : mais quand on*

doth that doe us ? what fruit may we reape of travelling ?

Eud. Travelling maketh men become wary, wiſe and diſcreet, not only for their owne profite, but alſo for the good of the Commonweale.

Caſ. A man can get no great wiſedome from ſeas, mountaines and woods.

Curius. Know you not the verſes of Homer, who ſpeaking of Vliſſes (whom hee ſets forth to the world as a patterne of a warie and prudent perſon) ſaith :

Vliſſes, fraught with skill, a happy man hath been.
Many mens manners he, and many a land had ſeene.

Caſ. All that is good ; but when a man con-

faid

fait un tel assemblage & bigarrure de mœurs, pour la plus part corrumpuës, comme le monde est plus addonné au mal, qu'au bien, à quoy resemble un tel homme? de quel gouſt est-il?

tracts in himselfe such a medley and diverſitie of manners for the most part corrupt, as the world is more given to evill then to good, unto what doth such a man resemble? of what taste is he?

Eud. *Vn homme pour peu discret qu'il soit, sçaura discerner le bien du mal, & la vertu du vice, & s'il se rencontre par fois en mauvaise compagnie, il evitera neanmoins, toutes les occasions qui le pourroit faire chopper. Il luy faut faire comme les abeilles qui des fleurs, herbes & racines venimeuses tirent le meilleur suc & le convertissent en miel.*

Eud. A man, though not very diſcreet, may be able to diſcerne good from evill, and vertue from vice, and if ſometimes hee chance into evill company, he ſhall nevertheleſſe ſhunne all the occaſions which might make him fall. Hee muſt doe as the honie-bees, who from flowers, hearbes, and rootes venimous, doe draw the beſt juice, and convert it into honie.

Caſ. *Mais un jeune homme, qui n'a pas grand jugement, comment peut il discerner tout cela?*

Caſ. But a young man, which hath no great judgement, how can hee diſcerne all that?

Eud.

Eud. *A ceux qui ſont trop jeunes, ou depourveus de jugement, on leur donne de conducteurs, qui leur ſervent de conſeilleurs.*

Caſ. *Ne conſiderez vous pas d'autre part, les dangers auſquels ſe haſardent telles gens qui ſont voyages; & puis combien de travaux il leur faut ſupporter.*

Cur. *Pour les dangers, il les faut prevoir par prudence: mais ſi on en vouloit tousjours auſſi penſer, & ſe laiſſer eſpouventer de tout ce qui pourroit advenir, l'on ne feroit jamais rien qui vaille; & quant aus travaux, vous ſçavez qu'on ne peut cueillir la roſe ſans ſe piquer. Aide toy, Dieu t'aidera.*

End. Thoſe which are too young and unfurniſhed of judgement, muſt have Guides given them, which may ſerve them for counſellers.

Caſ. You conſider not on the other ſide the dangers in which ſuch as travell doe hazard themſelues, and alſo how many labours they muſt endure.

Cu. As for the dangers, they muſt bee prevented by wiſedome: and if a man ſhould alwaies think on them, and ſuffer himſelfe to be affrighted with all that might happen, hee ſhould never doe any thing to any great purpoſe: and as for labours, you know, a man cannot gather the roſe without pricking himſelfe. Helpe thy ſelfe, and God will helpe thee.

Eud.

Caſ. *Mais que requerez vous en celuy qui veut dreſſer un voyage?*

Eud. *Il faut que le voyageant ait de l'aage, environ vingt ans; qu'il ſoit accompagné de jugement, qu'il ſoit pourveu de ſçavoir, & bien verſé aux lettres & arts neceſſaires; qu'il ayt la connoiſſance des hiſtoires, & quelque bon & fondamental commencement de la langue du païs, où il veut aller; & finalement ſoit fourni d'argent à ſuffiſance. Et pource que tout ce que vous en avez de profit, eſt l'elegance des mœurs qui vous accompaignent, & la confirmation du jugement, pourtant faut-il qu'un jeune homme ſoit accompagné de quelque perſonne d'honneur, a-*

Caſ. But what require you in him that is to goe a voyage, or to travell?

End. The traveller muſt have age, as about twentie; he muſt be accompanied with judgement, furniſhed with knowledge, well ſeene in good literature, and in neceſſarie arts; he muſt have the knowledge of hiſtories, and ſome good and fundamentall beginning in the language of the countrie, whither hee goeth; and laſtly, he muſt be ſufficiently furniſht with money. And becauſe all the profite you have is the elegance of the manners which accompanies you, and the confirmation of your judgement, it is meet a young man ſhould bee accompanied with ſome perſon of credite, with ſo much profite

vet

vec tant de profit & utilité, que les diverſes nations eſtrangeres, qu'il aura veuës luy forment le jugement, pour en rapporter non la fleur, non la fueille, mais bien le fruit tout meur & entier.

Caſ. *Sont-ce là toutes les parties requiſes en qui veut peregriner?*

Eud. *Oui, mais j'ay outre cela une loy compriſe en ces vers.*

Donne à l'humilité ſon manoir dans ton cœur;
Fay que de ſon rideau ta face ſoit voilee.
Aſſiſte à un chaſcun, à nul ne donne aigreur
Ni nuiſance; en ton fait ſois ſoigneux, & ne bée,
Ou te meſle d'autruy, mais voy d'un œil prudent;
A qui te fieras: au plus

and utilitie, that the divers ſtrange nations hee ſhall ſee, doe forme his judgement, that he may bring backe not the flower, nor the leaves, but the whole fruit ripe alſo.

Caſ. Are theſe all the parts requiſite in him that would travell?

Eud. Yes, yet I have beſides that a law comprehended in theſe verſes;

Bee milde of countenance, and meeke of minde;
Doe wrong to none, to all be good and kinde.
In thine owne buſineſſe be thou diligent.
Deale not with other mens, leſt thou repent;
And when thou truſt's take heed, be ever warie:
Heare much, talke little,

petit pardonne
Supporte ton pareil, par douceur cede au grand
Ton ſecret tien ſecret, n'en fay part à perſonne
Sois bien bon eſcouteur, mais fort petit parleur:
Ayes un œil veillant, & ſois ſobre de bouche,
Veritable au parler, des bons prompt amateur,
Endure les meſchans, quoy qu'ils ſoyent fort farouches:
Mais ſur tout crains Dieu, qui tout void & tout oit,
Et que fraude ne peut aucune tromperie.
Si tout cela tu fais, treſ-ſeur en tout endroit
Converſer tu pourras, meſmes en Barbarie.
Caſ. Mais en fin,

keep thy ſecrets charie.
Inferiours ſpare, to betters yeeld their due,
Beare with thy equals, peace will ſo enſue.

Bee ſober, watchfull, true, of promiſe ſure;
Loving to good men, evill men endure.

Feare God aboue all things, whoſe eyes perceive,
And eares heare all, no man can him deceive.
Thus amongſt ſtrangers maiſt thou ſafely be,
And live ſecure in midſt of Barbarie.
Caſ. But at length,

quel

quel profit tirera-il d'avoir veu tant de villes, pais, maiſons, hommes & beſtes?

Eud. *Ce n'eſt pas la ſeule difference d'un clocher à l'autre, que je deſire qu'il aille remarquant en ſon voyage; & tout ainſi que le laiſſant chez luy entre les bras de ſa grand'mere, il ne peut que croupir en une lourde & craſſe ignorance, auſſi quoy qu'on le remue de ville en ville, de pais en pais, il ne ſe faut pas promettre, qu'il en deviendra plus habille homme, ſi n'exerceant que ſes yeux corporels à regarder les choſes par le dehors, il ne les penetre, meſmes juſques aux entrailles des yeux de l'eſprit.*

Caſ. *Ce qui m'en a parci devant tant deſ-*

what profite ſhall a man receave, by having ſeene ſo many Cities, countries, houſes, men and beaſts?

Eud. It is not the diſtance of one ſteeple from another, that I deſire a man ſhould go obſerving in his travell: and like as leaving him at home in his grandames armes, he cannot but ſettle in a clowniſh and groſſe ignorance, ſo alſo though he be removed from citie to citie, from countrie to countrie, hee muſt not promiſe himſelfe, to bee the more wiſe and able man, if exerciſing onely his bodily eyes in beholding things outwardly, he doe not withall pierce even into the bowels of thinges with the eyes of his minde.

Caſan. That which hath heretofore ſo much

gouſté, c'a eſté que j'ay veu à la cour pluſieurs Gentils-hommes de ma connoiſſance, qui en tous leurs diſcours de leurs voyages d'Italie, ne font qu'admirer les Palais des Italiens, & racontent comme ils y ont appris le nom de toutes les Courtiſannes de Veniſe, & de Rome; & d'autres qui en leur voyage d'Allemaigne n'ont appris qu'à cognoiſtre la difference du vin de Rhin à celuy d'Orleans, que c'eſt que boire des ſantez, boire à la ronde, & autres telles bali verneries.

distaſtednesse, was this, that I saw at court many Gentlemen of mine acquaintance, who in all their discourses of their voyages into Italie, doe nothing but admire the Palaces of the Italians, and tell how they have learned there the names of all the curtizans of Venice and of Rome; and others which in their voyage of Germany, have onely learned to know the difference betweene Renniſh wine and Orleans wine, what it is to drinke healths, to drinke round, and other ſuch gulleries.

Cur. *Ce n'eſt ici que nous demandons telles teſtes ſans cervelle, qui ne s'amuſent qu'à choſes baſſes viles, & communes.*

Cur. Wee require not for travellers ſuch brainleſſe heads as thoſe, which onely buſie themſelves about baſe, vile, and common things.

Caſ. *Comment voulez-vous donc que le*

Caſ. How would you have a Gentleman travell

Gentil-

Gentilhomme voyage, pour ſe prevaloir de ſa peregrinaiion?

Eud. *Il y a deux points neceſſairement conſiderables au voyageant, qui conſiſtent à ſe prendre garde du corps & de l'ame des choſes.*

Caſ. *Qu'entendez-vous par le corps?*

Eud. *I'appelle le corps tout ce que l'œil peut veoir de plus remarquable, en une ville, en une Province, en une Royaume, comme ſont toutes ſortes d'edifices, comme Temples, Monaſteres, Chappelles, les Palais, hoſtels de ville, marchez, havres, ponts, ports, portes, murailles, forteresſes, baſtions, hoſpitaux, hales, colleges, arſenals; les belles maiſons des Bourgeois, beau jardins, viviers, fon-*

for to benefite himſelfe by his peregrination?

Eud. Two points are neceſſarily conſiderable in a Traveller, namely, that hee take heed to the bodie, and to the ſoule of things.

Caſ. What meane you by the body?

Eud. I call the body all that which the eye may ſee moſt remarkable in a Citie, in a Province, in a Kingdome, as are all ſorts of buildings, as Temples or Churches, Monaſteries, Chappells, Palaces, Towne houſes, market-places, havens, bridges, portes, gates, walls, fortreſſes, fortifications, hoſpitalls, Market houſes, Colledges, Arcenalls; the faire houſes of the Burgeſſes, the faire gardens, fiſhponds, fountaines.

taines. Et en tout cela, il y faut auſſi veoir & remarquer toutes les antiquitez, comme Amphitheatres, colomnes, Pyramides, ſtatues, tombeaux, & ainſi s'enquerir de ce qu'il y a de plus rare à voir en un pais ou ville.

And in all this muſt you ſee and obſerve all the antiquities, as Amphitheaters, Pillars, Pyramides, ſtatues, tombes, and ſo enquire of that which is moſt rare to bee ſeene in a countrie or Citie.

Cur. *Voila quant au corps & à l'exterieur, il vous reſte maintenant de traiter de l'interieur.*

Cur. So much for the body & outſide of things, it reſteth now you ſhould intreat of the inward.

Eud. *L'ame conſiſte proprement à s'enquerre, ſi le païs ou la ville ou l'on ſe trouve ſont regis & gouvernez en Monarchie, Ariſtocratie, ou Democratie. Et auſſi vous vous enquerrez du temps de la fondation & du fondateur, & combien de races il y en a eu, & ſi l'eſtat a eſté iadis autre qu'aujourdhuy; & ſi aujourd'huy il 'eſt electif ou*

End. The ſoule conſiſteth properly in informing your ſelfe, whether t e countrie or Citie bee governed by a Monarchicall, Ariſtocraticall, or Democraticall governement. And you ſhall alſo enquire of the time of the foundation and of the founder, and how many races or houſes there hath beene, and if the ſtate were other in times paſt then now; & if now it be *hereditaire;*

hereditaire; vous pourrez par meſme moyen apprendre non ſeulement le nom antique & moderne, mais auſſi vous informer des choſes, qui dés la memoire des habitants s'y ſont paſſées, pour vous inciter à rechercher l'hiſtoire. Si c'eſt une Republique, vous arrez quels ſont ſes Seigneurs, en quel nombre ils ſont, combien de temps ils exercent leur charge, quel ordre on tient en leur election, à qui c'eſt à la faire, de quelle qualité ils doivent eſtre, de quels privileges ils jouïſſent, quelle authorité ils ont, Combien il y a des Conſeils, & combien il y entre de Conſeillers en chaſcun, combien de juriſdictions ou chambres de juſtice, quelles ſont les ſubalternes, & quelles les

elective or hereditarie; you may by the ſame meanes learne not onely the ancient and moderne name, but alſo informe you of ſuch things as ſince the memorie of the inhabitants have there paſſed, the better to ſtirre you up to ſearch out the Hiſtorie. If it be a Common-wealth, you ſhall heare who are it Lords, how many in number they are, how long time they ſtay in their office, what order is held in their election, who are to make it, of what qualitie or condition they ought to be, what priviledges they enjoy, what authoritie they have; How many Councells there is, and how many Counſellours are in each of them, how many juriſdictions, or courts of Iuſtice; which are ſubordinate, & which

Souveraines, s'ils se servent de droicts municipaux, ou estrangers.

Cur. *Tout cela concerne la police & gouvernement: mais quand direz vous des revenus?*

Eud. *C'est le point où je passe maintenant: Ie veux donc que le voyageant s'enquesre du revenu ordinaire & annuel d'un estat, & en quoy il consiste, si c'est en domaine, en taille ou impostz sur les subiects, ou autres droicts: il faut aussi sçavoir si un tel estat peut plus en infanterie, qu'en cavalerie: Quels sont ses voisins, ou alliez, s'ils subsistent d'eux mesmes, ou s'ils sont soubs la protection d'autruy; en quoy cet estat & ses voisins peut plus pour la guerre; si c'est en mer ou*

Soveraigne, if they use lawes municipall or forraine.

Cur. All this concerneth the policie and government, but what will you speake of the revenues?

Eud. I passe to that point now. I would have then the traveller make inquirie of the ordinarie and yearely revenue of a State, & wherin it consisteth, if it be in demeasnes in taxes or impostz on the subjects, or other Rights: hee must also know if such a State bee more powerfull in Foote or in Horse: what are it neighbours or confederates, whether they subsist of themselves, or bee under the protection of another, in what consists the power of this State and its neighbours for the warre; if it be by sea or

en terre, & pour cet eſgard faut ſçavoir l'aſſiette d'un tel lieu, &c.

Cur. *Il ſeroit auſſi beſoing de ſçavoir tous les ports; quels les plus forts, & quels les moindres; s'il y a garniſon, & ſi le peuple du païs eſt addroit aux armes; combien de vaiſſeaux ils peuvent armer; quelle ſorte, ſi ce ſont galeres ou navires.*

Eud. *Il faut auſſi ſçavoir quels ſont leurs Capitaines & gens portans charge, & quelle diſcipline militaire ils obſervent, de quelles armes ils ſe ſervent, s'ils ſont meilleurs à l'aſſaut, ou en battaille rangee, quelle eſt la creance des Capitaines envers leurs ſoldats, quelles faveurs leurs maiſtres & Seigneurs leur portent. Outre cela,*

by land, and to this effect muſt he know the ſituation of ſuch a place, *&c.*

Cur. It ſhall bee alſo needfull to know all the Ports; which are the ſtronger, which the weaker; if there be a garriſon; and if the people of the countrie bee skilfull in Armes; how many veſſels they can arme forth to ſea; of what ſort, whether ſhips or gallies.

Eud. He muſt alſo know what are their Captaines and men bearing charge, and what militarie diſcipline they obſerve, what armes or weapons they uſe, whether they are better at an aſſault, or in a maine Battaile, what authoritie the Captaines have with their ſouldiers, and what favours their Lords and Maſters beare to them. Moreover, hee muſt

il

il faut venir aux villes frontieres, les veoir, & reconnoistre le fort & le foible. Il faut aussi juger de la façon que les peuples obeïssent, si c'est par amour ou contrainte, & s'ils sont bien affectionnez à leurs superieurs; & puis les avenues du païs, l'aisance ou difficulté d'un passage, havre & riviere.

Cur. *Vous ne dites rien des gens de lettres.*

Eud. *Ils ne sont point oubliez: Il faut sçavoir si les doctes sont en multitude ou paucité en un Estat, Quelles Academies, & Colleges ils ont, de quels privileges jouïssent les escoliers, s'il y a frequence, Quelle faculté y est la plus florissante, à qui est deferé la charge du Rectorat, quels*

visite the frontier townes, see them, and know the strong and the weaker. Hee must also judge in what fashion the peoples doe obey, whether it bee by love or constraint, and whether they stand well affectionate towards their superiours; And then the entries into the countrie, the easinesse or difficultie of a passage, haven, or river.

Cur. You say nothing of men of learning.

Eud. They are not forgotten: He must know if in a state, the number of learned men be many or few, what Universities and Colledges they have, what priviledges the schollers injoy; whether there be great frequencie, which faculrie is the most flourishing, to whom is deferred the Rectorship or Headship; what

Theolo-

Theologiens, Philoſophes, Medicins, Iuriſconſultes ou Docteurs es loix, Hiſtoriens, Poetes, Mathematiciens, s'ils ſont du lieu, ou eſtrangers, &c.

Cur. *En voila beaucoup: j'y adjouſteray encor les mœurs du commun peuple, aſçavoir s'il eſt affable ou rechigneux, vertueux ou vicieux, s'il aime l'eſtranger ou non : Mais pource que la multitude des choſes, qui ſont à remarquer en un eſtat & païs luy pourroit affoiblir la memoire pour luy en deſrober quelque partie, je ſerois d'advis, qu'on aye un livre aſſez grand, pour en icelluy eſcrire le tout en bon ordre. Et je conſeille au voyageant, d'avoir outre les guides des chemins, une carte*

Divines, Philoſophers, Phyſitians, Lawyers or Civilians, Hiſtorians, Poets, Mathematicians there are, and whether they are homeborne or ſtrangers, *&c.*

Cur. There is much: I will adde hereto alſo the manners of the common people, to wit, whether they be courteous or curriſh, vertuous or vicious, and if they love ſtrangers, or no: but becauſe the multitude of things obſervable in a State and countrie, may confound the memorie whereby ſome part may ſlippe away, my opinion is, hee ſhould have a booke of ſufficient bigneſſe, wherein to write downe all in good order. And I counſell our traveller to have (beſides his guides for the wayes) a Mappe

Geogra-

Geographique & Hydrographique, de tous les pais & contrees où il ſe trouvera, pour en icelle tirer de lieu à autre une ligne à meſure qu'il s'advance en ſon voyage, & avec cela aye un journal en guiſe d'Almanach, où il notera de jour à autre toutes les villes, bourgs, villages, chaſteaux, paſſages, deſtroits, ſans oublier les lieuës, ce qu'à loiſir il pourra mettre au net en ſon grand livre de remarques.

Eud. *Mais, afin qu'il ne voyage point comme Enfant du commun, il luy ſera meſſeant & comme indigne de ſa qualité, de paſſer en la cour d'aucun Prince, ſans avoir l'honneur de luy faire la reverence, & de ſe faire connoiſtre à luy, & aux plus*

Geographicall and Hydrographicall of all the countries & places where he ſhall come, for to draw therein a line from place to place, according as hee goeth forwards in his voyage, and withall have a day-booke in faſhion of an Almanacke, wherein he ſhall note from day to day, all the Cities, Townes, villages, Caſtles, paſſages, ſtraites, not forgetting the leagues, or miles, which at leaſure hee may write faire into his great booke of obſervations.

Eud. But that hee may not travell like one of common or meane deſcent, it ſhall misbecome him, and be unworthy his qualitie, to paſſe into the Court of any Prince, without having the honour to doe him reverence, & to make himſelfe known to him, and to the

grands

grands de ſon païs.

Cur. *Vrayement un tel homme, qui aura tellement voyagé, & converſé avec les grands, & en tant de lieux & occaſions, ne peut avoir qu'aſſez de ſuffiſance pour ſervir à un Roy, à un Eſtat, & au bien public.*

Eud. *Vous reconnoiſtrez trois fois plus de modeſtie, douceur & humilité en un tel homme, qu'en aucun autre caſannier, qui n'aura jamais rien veu, que par le pertuis d'un pot caſſé, comme trouvez de ces glorieux, qui pour ſe voir ſur les eſpaules quelque habit à la nouvelle mode de la Cour, enflez comme crapaux, enident que les autres Gentils-hommes ſoyent bien quelque choſe moins qu'eux, leur*

greateſt of his countrie.

Cur. Truly ſuch a man, that hath ſo travelled, and converſed with Great ones, and in ſo many places and occaſions, cannot chooſe but have ſufficiencie enough in him for the ſervice of a King, of a State, and of the common-wealth.

End. You ſhall perceave three times more modeſtie, gentleneſſe, and humilitie in ſuch a man, than in any other houſe-dove, which hath never ſeene any thing, but through the hole of a broken pot; as you finde of theſe vaine-glorious fooles, who having gotten on their backe ſome ſuite of apparell of the new Court-faſhion, ſwoln like toades, eſteeme other Gentlemen their inferiours, in ſeeing them weare ſome doublet,

voyant

voyant porter quelque pourpoint, manteau, ou autre accouſtrement qui ait encores ſon garbe à l'antique, & ne jugeront d'une perſonne au ſens, au diſcours, ou à l'integrité des mœurs, mais ſeulement à la forme de ſon chapeau, à la grandeur de ſa fraiſe, ou à telle autre choſe exterieure.

Cur. *Vn diamant de la vieille roche, quoy que tout brut, ou mal enchaſſé, ou mal poli, eſt touſiours plus precieux qu'un hapelourde, pour tout l'eſmail, feuille & façon, dont elle pourroit eſtre enrichie.*

End. *Or c'eſt aſſez: Meſſieurs, vous remerciant de voſtre bonne compagnie, vous preſenteray mes treſhumbles ſervices. Adieu Meſſieurs.*

cloake or other apparell which is yet of the ancient faſhion; and will not judge of a man by his wit, and underſtanding, by his diſcourſe, or by the integritie of his manners, but onely by the faſhion of his hat, the greatneſſe of his ruffe, or by ſome ſuch other outward thing.

Cur. A true Diamond of the old rocke, though yet uncut, or ill ſet, or ill poliſhed, is evermore precious than a counterfeit, for all the enamell, foyle, and faſhion, wherewith it can be enriched.

End. Well, wee have talked enough Gentlemen; thanking you for your good company, I preſent you my moſt humble ſervice. God bee with you Gentlemen.

FINIS.

d.